

Statue of Joseph 1st at Lisbon.

Plate I.

Published by Gaskell & Davies Nov^r 1797.



Statue of Joseph 1st at Lisbon.

Plate I.

Published by Gaskell & Davies Nov^r 1797.

A
GENERAL VIEW
OF THE STATE OF
P O R T U G A L ;

CONTAINING
A TOPOGRAPHICAL DESCRIPTION THEREOF.

IN WHICH ARE INCLUDED,
AN ACCOUNT OF THE PHYSICAL AND MORAL
STATE OF THE KINGDOM;

TOGETHER WITH
OBSERVATIONS ON THE ANIMAL, VEGETABLE, AND
MINERAL PRODUCTIONS OF ITS COLONIES.

The WHOLE compiled from the best PORTUGUESE WRITERS, and
from Notices obtained in the Country,
By JAMES MURPHY.

ILLUSTRATED WITH PLATES.

L O N D O N :
PRINTED FOR T. CADELL JUN. AND W. DAVIES, IN THE STRAND.
1798.

Port 2147.97.5⁴
✓

HARVARD COLLEGE LIBRARY
FROM THE LIBRARY OF
FERNANDO PALHA
DECEMBER 3, 1928

N.

TO
HIS EXCELLENCY
DON JOHN D'ALMEIDA DE MELLO E CASTRO,
COMMANDER OF THE ORDERS OF CHRIST AND ST. JAMES,
MEMBER OF THE PORTUGUESE COUNCIL OF FINANCE,
ONE OF THE HONORABLE PRIVY COUNSELLORS OF HER MOST
FAITHFUL MAJESTY, AND
HER ENVOY EXTRAORDINARY AND MINISTER PLENIPOTENTIARY
TO THE COURT OF GREAT BRITAIN.

ILLUSTRIOUS SIR,

*A GREAT part of The General View of the
State of Portugal being indebted to those
volumes which your Excellency's condescension
afforded me the means of consulting, I cannot
omit this opportunity of testifying my grateful
acknowledgment.*

*Of the subjects which it treats, few are more
competent to judge than your Excellency, who, to
the various acquirements of the enlightened
Statesman, unite a comprehensive knowledge of
every*

every branch of commerce, trade, manufacture, and the fine arts.

Talents so superior, animated by the patriotic virtues which are hereditary in your noble family, cannot eventually fail to conduce to the prosperity of the Portuguese nation. May your Excellency have the felicity to see it realised, and thus add fresh laurels to those which you inherit from your renowned ancestors the ALMEIDA's and CASTRO's, who have rendered their names celebrated in history by their glorious victories in Asia, is the sincere wish of

YOUR EXCELLENCY'S

Most devoted, and

much obliged humble Servant,

JAMES MURPHY.

LONDON,
November 22, 1797.

P R E F A C E.

A General View of the State of Portugal seemed to be a work much wanting in our language ; for the accounts our geographical writers have given of that country are very imperfect and full of errors ; defects which the hasty sketches of travellers cannot be expected to supply : hence I judged, that a more complete selection than has hitherto appeared, of the most interesting particulars of a nation so nearly allied to us in every political point of view, may not be unacceptable to the Public.

In all works of this nature, much must necessarily depend upon the reports of others, and who are so likely to furnish them authentic, as the best authorities among the native writers ? These have constantly been my guides, in the compilation of the following sheets ; though I have omitted to quote them upon every occasion, that I might not incumber the work with a long list of authors ; I trust, however, that their relations, so far as they extend in this collection, are appositely chosen, and faithfully translated.

translated. This, together with my personal observations and inquiries, are the two sources from whence are derived the materials of the whole; in the composition of which, it was my wish that veracity should antecede all other considerations. If I have not attained this wish; if the statements and descriptions be scanty or defective, the present unexplored state of the country, and the sterility of its topographical writers, must plead my apology.

Those who have visited Portugal can best judge whether the Plates be accurate representations of their respective subjects. I trust they are. They have been engraved from sketches I had made during my residence in the country, except Plates, I. II. XV. the drawings of which are by different hands; the Map is a copy from a Portuguese one.

LIST OF PLATES.

PLATE				
I.	Statue of JOSEPH I. at Lisbon	—	<i>To face Title-page</i>	
II.	A View of the Bay of Lisbon	—	—	32
III.	Portuguese Soldiers	—	—	118
IV.	Interior View of a Portuguese Apartment		—	140
V.	Portuguese Peasantry	—	—	142
VI.	A Portuguese Gentleman on a Journey	—	—	142
VII.	A Friar and a Nun	—	—	142
VIII.	A Portuguese Team	—	—	146
IX.	Travelling in a Litter	—	—	146
X.	A Farmer's Daughter going to the Fair of Leiria		—	146
XI.	A Courier from Lisbon to Oporto	—	—	146
XII.	Pedestrians attacking a Bull	—	—	146
XIII.	A Cavalier attacking a Bull	—	—	146
XIV.	A Brazillian attacking a Bull	—	—	146
XV.	A View of the City and University of Coimbra		—	154
XVI.	A Map of Portugal	—	—	<i>At the End</i>

Lately Published,

By T. CADELL jun. and W. DAVIES, Strand,

TRAVELS IN PORTUGAL, through the Provinces of *Entre Douro e Minho, Beira, Estremadura, and Alemtejo*, in the Years 1789 and 1790:—Consisting of Observations on the Manners, Customs, Trade, Public Buildings, Arts, Antiquities, &c. of that Kingdom. Illustrated with twenty-four Plates, of Views, Characters, Antiquities, &c. by JAMES MURPHY, Architect. 4to. 17. 7s. in Boards.

CONTENTS.

TABLE of WEIGHTS and MEASURES,			Page
			xi
CHAP.			
I.	Situation and etymology,	—	1
II.	Modern division,	—	3
III.	Principal mountains,	—	10
IV.	Principal rivers and lakes,	—	13
V.	Baths and mineral waters,	—	21
VI.	Mines and caves,	—	25
VII.	Ports and bays,	—	29
VIII.	State of agriculture,	—	34
IX.	Vegetable and animal productions,	—	39
X.	Minerals, —	—	43
XI.	Population and industry,	—	51
XII.	Commerce, —	—	59
XIII.	Premiums, —	—	66
XIV.	On the preference that agriculture claims over manufactures in Portugal. by Dominick Vandelli, LL. D. &c. &c.		74
XV.	Observations on some of the natural productions of the Por- tuguese colonies, not generally known, or not converted to use. By Dominick Vandelli, LL. D. &c. &c.		87
XVI.	Constitution and government, —	—	109
XVII.	Royal Titles—Nobility—Orders of Knighthood, —		113
XVIII.	Revenue, —	—	115
	a		XIX.

CONTENTS.

CHAP.			Page
XIX.	Military and marine,	—	117
XX.	Portuguese conquests,	—	120
XXI.	Coins, ancient and modern,	—	125
XXII.	Antiquities and curiosities,	—	129
XXIII.	Ceremonies used at the death of the kings of Portugal,	—	134
XXIV.	Manners, customs, dress, and diversions,	—	136
XXV.	Language,	—	147
XXVI.	Genius and learning,	—	153
XXVII.	Anecdotes of distinguished Portuguese characters,	—	160
XXVIII.	Narrative of Don Pedro de Mentirosa,	—	197
XXIX.	Origin of Portugal,	—	216
XXX.	Anecdotes of the kings of Portugal,	—	224

T A B L E

O F

WEIGHTS and MEASURES made use of in *PORTUGAL*.

<i>Arratel,</i>	-	a pound weight, Avoirdupois.
<i>Arroba,</i>	-	a weight of 32 pounds.
<i>Quintal,</i>	-	a weight of 128 pounds.
<i>Canada,</i>	-	a liquid measure containing 3 pints.
<i>Almude,</i>	-	a measure containing the one-and-twentieth part of a pipe, or 23 quarts nearly.
<i>Alqueire,</i>	-	a measure containing 23 pints.
<i>Moia,</i>	-	a measure containing 60 <i>alqueires</i> , or $172\frac{1}{2}$ gallons.
<i>Dedo,</i>	-	or finger, a space equal to 4 barley-corns laterally united:
<i>Polegada,</i>	-	or inch, = 10 points or lines.
<i>Palmo Craveiro,</i>	or palm	= 8 <i>polegadas</i> , or $8\frac{6}{10}$ inches English.
<i>Pé,</i>	-	or foot, = 12 <i>polegadas</i> , or $1\frac{1}{2}$ <i>palmos</i> . Hence a Portuguese foot is to an English foot as $12\frac{9}{10}$ is to 12.
<i>Covado,</i>	-	or yard, = 3 <i>palmos</i> .
<i>Vara,</i>	-	or ell, = 5 <i>palmos</i> .
<i>Passo Geometrica,</i>	or Geometrical pace,	= $7\frac{1}{2}$ <i>palmos</i> .
<i>Braca,</i>	-	or fathom, = 10 <i>palmos</i> .
<i>Legua,</i>	-	or league, = 28,168 <i>palmos</i> .
<i>Graon,</i>	-	or degree, = 18 <i>leguas</i> .
<i>N. B.</i> A Portuguese league is now generally computed at $3\frac{1}{2}$ statute miles, and a degree at $68\frac{2}{3}$ statute miles.		
<i>Gcira,</i>	-	a measure of land similar to our acre, containing 240 feet in length by 120 in breadth.

ERRATA:

- Page 1. last line of note, *for* nine to ten *read* as 3 is to 3 $\frac{1}{2}$
5. line 10. *for* of the beautiful *read* of beautiful
15. — 8. *for* quay *read* quays
37. — 12. *for* appropriated *read* adapted
48. — 14. *for* copperals *read* copperas
18. *for* allum *read* alum
62. — 5. *for* or *read* besides
7. *for* or *read* and
117. — 4. *for* millions sterling *read* millions of cruzados
160. insert PART II. above CHAP. XXVII.
170. line *penult.* *for* nation *read* monarchy

GENERAL VIEW
OF THE
STATE OF PORTUGAL.

PART I.

CHAP. I.

Situation and Etymology.

IN the most western part of the Continent of Europe is situated the kingdom of Portugal, between 37 and 42 degrees of North latitude, and between 7 and 10 degrees of West longitude*. Its greatest length, measured along the sea-coast, from North to South, is exactly 100 leagues, and the breadth 35. The circumference comprehends 285 leagues, 135 of which consist of sea-coast, and the remaining 150 of terrestrial boundary†.

* From the meridian of London.

† This calculation is formed on the supposition that each degree of the meridian consists of eighteen leagues, and each degree of the parallel of fourteen; and that the kingdom comprehends five degrees and some minutes latitude, and three longitude.

N. B. The Portuguese compute by leagues, a manner which we are under the necessity of adopting in the following account, to avoid the repeated calculations and fractions that would arise from reducing them to English miles; as appears by the proportion a Portuguese league bears to an English, which is as nine to ten.

It is bounded by the province of Galicia on the North; the coast of Algarve on the South; the Atlantic Ocean on the West; by Old Castile, Leon, and Andaluzia on the East.

The most ancient name of this kingdom was *Lusitania*; a name which, according to most Geographers and Historians, is derived from *Lyfas*, the son of *Bacchus*, who is supposed to have settled a colony therein.

If we credit the learned Samuel Bochart, the word *Lusitania* is Phœnician, derived from *Luz**, which signifies an almond. And as Portugal was always fertile in the production of almonds, and it being customary with the Phœnicians to give names to the countries they inhabited from the fruits in which they most abounded, the conjecture does not appear incongruous.

As to the name *Portugal*, it is generally allowed to be derived from a people called *Cale*, who anciently dwelt on the banks of the river Douro, and there founded a city they called *Portucale* or *Portugal* (now Oporto). About the year 1057 this name was extended to the whole kingdom.

Portugal is included in the sixth climate, and in the beginning of the seventh. Its longest day, consequently, is fifteen

* "Lusitania was so called from its plenty of herbage, whereby so many cattle were fed and multiplied, that the Romans invented the fable of the Lusitanian mares breeding by the wind. *In Lusitanis juxta flumen Tagum, vento equas fetus concipere multi auctores prodidere: quæ fabulæ ex equarum fecunditate, & gregum multitudine natæ sunt: qui tanti in Gallaciâ & Lusitaniâ, ac tam pernices visuntur, ut non immerito vento ipso concepti*

videantur. (Justin. l. xliv. c. 3.) *Luis*, or *Lus*, in Irish, is *herbage*, and *Tan* is *region*, or *country*; *Luis-tan*, therefore, signifies the country abounding with *herbage*. *Las*, in Irish, also signifies the quick growth of *herbage*—Names extremely applicable to the soil of Lusitania."

Colonel VALLANCEY's Vindication of the Ancient Hist. of Ireland, vol. iv. p. 95.

hours.

hours. And though under such a climate we might naturally expect excessive heats, yet we find them allayed by refreshing breezes; and in some of the provinces the extremities of heat and cold are so tempered, that the transition from one extreme to another is scarcely perceptible. To this happy temperature is ascribed the extreme fertility of the soil; a soil calculated for the growth both of the necessaries and luxuries of life in abundance, as experience taught its ancient inhabitants, who were less sparing of their toil than the modern.

C H A P. II.

Modern Division.

PORTUGAL is divided into six provinces, or regions; namely,
 1. *Entre Douro e Minho.* 2. *Tras-os-Montes.* 3. *Beira.* 4. *Estremadura.* 5. *Alentejo.* 6. *Algarve.* The two first are situated on the Northern extremity, the two last on the Southern; between them are comprised the other two. Each province is divided into *comarcas* *, for the better administration of justice; and each *comarca* has under its jurisdiction a certain number of towns and villages, which are governed by their respective magistrates, subordinate to the chief magistrates of the *comarcas*. Having premised thus much, we shall give a short description of each province, beginning at the North with that called

* A subdivision similar to a hundred, or part of a shire.

A GENERAL VIEW OF THE

I. *The Province of ENTRE DOURO E MINHO.*

This province is situated between the rivers Douro and Minho, as its name imports; the latter forms its boundary towards the North, the former towards the South. Its length is 18 leagues from North to South; from East to West it measures 12 leagues in the broadest part; in other parts its breadth does not exceed 8 leagues. The population of this small province is estimated at 900,000, a much greater number than are contained in the same extent of territory in any other part of the kingdom.

As a numerous population is one of the best criterions of industry, we can have the less doubt of what the Portuguese affirm concerning the flourishing state of this province. Of black cattle it contains 400,000, and more than a million of sheep. Its staple trade is wine; for a great part of that properly called Port wine is made here. It also yields large quantities of flax, of which the women are the chief manufacturers. Fruits of various kinds, particularly oranges, lemons, walnuts, and chefnuts, grow here in great plenty, as appears by the following instances.

An orange-tree has been known to yield five cart loads of oranges at a time. From a walnut-tree has been gathered a *moya** of nuts. The different ramifications of a vine-root have been known to bear such a quantity of grapes in a season, as yielded a pipe of wine†.—Doctor *John de Barros*, in

* See the Table of Weights and Measures.

† *Castro's Mappa de Portugal*, tom. i. p. 47.

his description of this province, says, that there are trees in it of immense magnitude; among those he instances, is one, the hollow of which contained ten men on horseback; an assertion corroborated by one of the cavaliers, namely, the *Marquis de Villa-Real*.

Among its plantations of ever-greens, are the laurel, holm, plantain, box, myrtle, yew, and cypress. The high state of cultivation to which the valleys are brought; the number of its rivers and springs, the fertility of the soil in general, the salubrity of the air, and the number of the beautiful prospects it exhibits, caused *Varia* to say, "If there be Elysian fields "in the world, they exist in the province of *Entre Douro e Minho*."

It contains two cities, viz. *Oporto*, and *Braga*; 26 towns, of which six are sea-ports; three Collegiate churches; 1400 churches and chapels; 130 monasteries; 200 stone bridges. Besides other manufactories, it has one for linen, one for cutlery, and another for hats. Its inhabitants are hardy, industrious, and enterprising. Next to *Algarve*, it furnishes the best soldiers; and the greatest number of the merchants of the kingdom, and of its foreign dominions, are natives thereof. Here the first Portuguese princes resided. It was the first that commenced the expulsion of the Moors, and, in a manner, laid the foundation of the kingdom to which its chief city gave the name of *Portugal*.

II. *The Province of* TRAS-OS-MONTES.

Antiquaries, who wish to trace the original inhabitants of a nation, generally seek them in the most mountainous parts; for mountains have always been the asylum of those who have preferred their liberty, their hereditary customs, and ancient prejudices, to the laws of the victorious invader. Hence *Tras-os-Montes* appears to be the most probable place for tracing the Aborigines of Portugal, as being the most mountainous part of the kingdom. From the native writers we learn, that the inhabitants are robust, hardy, and very little addicted to vice. The gentlemen are reputed brave, active, devoted to warlike pursuits, and, like the Welsh, fond of tracing their ancient lineage. The people in general, says *Faria*, are rude, clownish, and speak a corrupt language. The women of condition live exceedingly retired; but the poorer sort work, in common with their husbands, at tilling, sowing, and reaping.

The province is 34 leagues in length, by 26 in breadth. Its soil is tolerable, but much inferior to that of the last-mentioned province; it contains, however, some pleasant valleys, which yield corn, oil, fruit, honey, and a considerable quantity of wine. Its principal manufactures are silk, for the fabrication of which article it has been long celebrated. The Dukedom of *Bragança*, which was the patrimony of the reigning family of Portugal before they ascended the throne, is situated here. It contains two cities, namely *Miranda* and *Bragança*, 50 towns, and 620 parishes.

III. *The*

III. *The Province of BEIRA,*

Which is the largest province of the kingdom, has the title of Principality since the year 1734; the eldest son of the Prince of Brazil, heir to the crown, being styled Prince thereof. It forms nearly a square, being 36 leagues long, by 34 broad; and contains five cities, viz. *Coimbra, Viseu, Lamego, Guarda, and Aveiro*; 234 towns, upwards of 44 convents, and 23 nunneries. *Coimbra* is the seat of the first university of the kingdom.

Nature has been very lavish of her favours on this province; it is blessed with a fertile soil, pure and copious waters, and salubrity of air; yet, with all these advantages, as if the blessings of nature had palsied the hand of industry, we find tracts of the finest land left uncultivated. Such parts as are tilled, produce great quantities of wine, Indian corn, rye, and nuts. Every kind of fruit known in the kingdom may be found here in the highest perfection. The inhabitants bordering on the sea-coast are supplied with abundance of fish, particularly pilchards; and almost every part of the country affords plenty of game.

IV. *The Province of ESTREMADURA*

Is 40 leagues in length, by 18 in breadth; the river Tagus passes through the centre of it, dividing it nearly into two equal parts. The air, soil, and productions, differ but very little from those of the province of Beira; the land here, however, in general, is better cultivated; particularly the corn, vine, and olive grounds. *Santarem* is remarkable for the growth of corn and oil; *Carcavela*, for the quality of its wine; and *Collares*, for the quantity and excellence of its fruit.

In

In this province is situated Lisbon, the capital of the kingdom, and another city called *Lisboa*. Its towns are 114 in number; parishes 462; convents and monasteries 170. It also contains three colleges, and a tribunal of Inquisition. The handsomest persons of both sexes are to be found here; and the purest dialect of the Portuguese language is spoken therein.

V. The Province of ALENTEJO.

This province is computed to extend 39 leagues in length, by 35 in breadth. Its inhabitants are rated only at 300,000, a very inconsiderable number for so large and fertile a territory. Were its population to that of the province of Minho reciprocally as their magnitude, it ought to contain upwards of four millions. This deficiency is ascribed to various causes; from its having been at all times the chief theatre of war between the Spaniards and Portuguese; from its maintaining a standing army of ten regiments of infantry, and four of cavalry, which are recruited in the province, to the great injury of agriculture and population; from a great part of the country being overlaid with sand, and the want of water in many places. Diligence and ingenuity would soon overcome the two last obstacles, but that can hardly be expected, till the inhabitants have more industry and less pride.

Alentejo is reputed to have given birth to many illustrious men, among whom are reckoned the celebrated Antiquary *Resendi*, and the great *Vasco de Gama*, the discoverer of India. It contains four cities, viz. *Evora*, *Beja*, *Elvas*, and *Portalegre*; 105 towns; and 358 parishes. Corn, oil, and fruit, are its three principal

principal natural productions. Its wine is not reputed so good nor abundant as that of the other provinces.

VI. *The Province of ALGARVE*

Is the most southern province of the kingdom. Its name, which is supposed to be derived from the Arabic language, signifies a fruitful country; or, according to others, whose etymology appears more probable, it signifies a country situated towards the West *. It is 27 leagues in length, by 8 in breadth. 35 leagues of its circumference are encompassed by the sea. *Don Alfonso III.* was the first who immutably annexed it to the crown of Portugal; and since then it bears the title of *kingdom*.

This small kingdom is exceedingly fruitful; the corn that grows near Cape St. Vincent is accounted excellent; it produces wine of a peculiarly rich flavor. Here are seen many groves of fig-trees; it also yields great quantities of almonds and raisins, which, together with the fishery of its coasts, constitute important branches of the foreign and domestic commerce of Portugal.

* *Gharb* signifies the West; and according to different dialects, it is written or pronounced *Gharb*, *Gharv*, *Harb*, *Warb*, *Erb*, *Erab*, *Europ*, as different nations pronounce the letter *y*. This name consequently became general to the western extremities of every continent. Before the Eastern nations had navigated the Mediterranean, and discovered countries lying more westward, they gave the name of *Arabia*, or *Gharb*, or *Warb*, to that part of Asia which bears the name to this day; and which was then the most western country. But when their knowledge in geo-

graphy was enlarged, the west of Africa and of Europe became so many *Gharvs*. The name *Gharb*, and all the *Gharbs* existing at this day, signify the two sides of the Straights of Gibraltar. From the Hebrew word pronounced *Garb*, comes *Gharbin*, given by the Languedocians to the western wind, and to that part of the Mediterranean bordering on that province. Preceded by the Oriental article *al*, it forms *Algarves*, the most southern province of Portugal.

Extracted from Court de GEBELIN.

The most noted particulars relating to the foregoing provinces may be seen in the following Table:

Provinces —	Minho	Tras-os-Montes	Beira	Estremadura	Alentejo	Algarve.
Leagues in length	18	34	36	40	39	28
Leagues in breadth	12	26	34	18	35	8
Population —	900,000	140,000	520,000	635,000	300,000	93,470
Comarcas —	6	4	8	8	8	2
Cities —	2	2	5	2	4	4
Towns —	26	50	234	114	105	12
Parishes —	1500	620	1090	462	358	67
Capital cities —	Oporto	Miranda	Coimbra	Lisbon	Evora	Faro.
Armories —	Viana	Chaves	Almeida	Lisbon	Elvas	Lagos.
Universities —	—	—	1	—	1	—
Patriarch —	—	—	—	1	—	—
Archbishops —	1	—	—	—	1	—
Bishops —	1	1	4	1	2	1
Inquisitions —	—	—	1	3	1	—

C H A P. III.

Principal Mountains.

THE Portuguese have divers names for mountains and hills descriptive of their form and elevation; for example, *Monte*, a mountain; *Montezinho*, a little mountain, larger than a hill; *Outeiro*, a hill; *Outeirinho*, a hillock; *Serra*, a very lofty mountain, whose surface exhibits various inequalities; *Serrania*, a cluster of mountains; *Penha*, a rocky precipice. Few countries exhibit a greater variety of each kind of these than Portugal. The various inequalities of the surface of the country in general, may be compared to the face of the great Atlantic Ocean on the day succeeding a violent storm.

Its

Its mountains, for the most part, are distributed either into chains or clusters. The former extend from different parts of Spain, one branch enters the province of *Tras-os-Montes* near the town of *Chaves*; another the province of *Minho*, on the borders of *Leon*. A branch from Mount *Idubeda* in Spain enters Portugal near the city of *Guarda*. It is observed, that their direction, in general, is from East to West; like that of the chief rivers of the kingdom. Whether they be branches of the Pyrenees, as is commonly supposed, or not, we shall leave others to determine. We might, indeed, present the reader with many curious observations respecting the organization, production, and other properties of these stupendous heights, were we inclined to adopt traditionary reports; but such testimonies we shall cautiously reject, and be silent where we cannot at least have probability for our guide.

Arrabida is a very lofty mountain, or rather a chain of mountains, in the province of *Estremadura*, running from N. E. to S. W. On the most bleak and solitary part of it is a convent of Friars of the rigid order of St. Francis. And on another part, anciently called the Promontory of Neptune, there stood a temple dedicated to that false divinity. Among other ancient vestiges found here, was a statue of bronze, and various inscriptional stones, of which no trace remains at this day. It is very remarkable, if what the Portuguese writers mention of this mountain be true, to wit, that every part of it is free from venomous reptiles. A kind of variegated marble is found in it, which, when polished, has a beautiful appearance.

Cintra, one of the most celebrated mountains in Europe, is situated about five leagues S. W. of Lisbon. To navigators it

is well known, as being the most westerly part of all Europe. The cape contiguous to it, which is called the Rock of Cintra, was named by the ancient geographers the Promontory of the Moon, or *Hierna* according to Strabo. Both the organization and mineral productions of this mountain are well worthy the attention of the judicious naturalist; the whole surface of it being composed of loose shattered rocks, of immense size, scattered about as if forced out of the bowels of the earth by some violent explosion.

The antiquary also would find here something to arrest his attention. On the western side is a fine ancient bath in tolerable preservation; the remains of an ancient fortification, with its dilapidated towers, and several other vestiges, apparently of Moorish origin.

Estrella. In the province of Beira is situated the mountain of *Estrella*, anciently called *Herminius*. Its summit is covered with snow the greatest part of the year. On one of its ridges is a famous lake, of which we shall speak hereafter. Three large rivers, namely the *Zezere*, the *Alva*, and the *Mondego*, derive their sources from different parts of the base of this mountain. As to its height we cannot speak with certainty, since it has not been yet accurately ascertained; nor, indeed, that of any other mountain in the kingdom, so far as our inquiry has extended; hence we are under the necessity of passing over that particular in silence.

Montejunto, anciently called *Tagrus*, or *Sagrus*, is situated in the province of *Estremadura*. Its circumference is computed at four leagues. There are two lakes of water on its summit.

mit. Every part of it so abounds in rich pasture, that it was celebrated among the ancients for the fecundity and fleetness of its horses.

Offa is a famous chain of mountains, seven leagues long, by two and a half broad, situated between *Evora* and *Estremoz* in the province of *Alentejo*. In a garden belonging to a convent of friars, perched on a part of this mountain, is a lemon-tree, that has been known to produce ten thousand lemons in a year, as affirmed by *John Salgado de Arango*, in his description of *Alentejo*.

C H A P. IV.

Principal Rivers and Lakes.

ONE of the chief causes of the depressed state of agriculture in Portugal, is ascribed to the want of inland navigation; notwithstanding there are but few countries of its magnitude better watered, or better adapted for the construction of canals; for, according to *Castro's Mappa de Portugal*, it contains 260 rivers great and small.

The principal rivers are, the *Tagus*, the *Douro*, the *Minho*, and the *Guadiana*. The first might be made navigable from Lisbon to Alcantara on the frontiers of Spain, that is about 50 leagues, for a sum considerably less than has been expended on some of the canals of England or of Ireland. And very few,

few, perhaps, who understand hydraulicks will deny but that it is practicable, by means of the same river, to open a communication between the capitals of Spain and Portugal; and consequently between the respective cities, towns, and villages on its borders in both kingdoms, for the space of 400 miles and upwards.

The reader will the readier admit the practicability of the above, on considering that the Tagus, besides being from its own source an abundant river, is farther augmented by the contribution of ninety inferior rivers and streams.

The nature of the rivers *Douro* and *Minho* apparently renders them also susceptible of similar improvements; not to mention the intersecting canals that might be formed from one river to another, in various parts of the kingdom. Thus the farmers of the interior provinces might be enabled to bring the produce of their fields to the market at a trifling expence; whereas, according to the present order of things, they are obliged to restrict the culture of grain to very little more than they can sell to the neighbouring inhabitants, as the expence of carriage from *Beira Alto*, or the interior of *Alentejo* to Lisbon, is very little less than from Philadelphia. The importance of the subject must plead our apology for the length of this digression.

The Tagus. Portugal is indebted to Spain for its four principal rivers; of these the *Tagus* claims the first rank. This celebrated river has its source in the mountain of *Molina*, at the extremity of Castile next to Aragon; thence it winds its course, for the most part, due West, till it mingles its current

with the Atlantic Ocean, after traversing 150 leagues, of which Portugal possesses 50, and Spain the remainder.

The tributary streams by which it is augmented, render it very copious as it approaches the capital. Here it meets a branch of the Atlantic, and forms one of the most noble harbours in the world for capacity, depth, and shelter; ships of the first rate might with safety approach within a short distance of the quay of Lisbon.

There is one circumstance relating to this river that is worthy of remark. In its course through Portugal it overflows its banks every year as regularly as the Nile, and inundates the champagne lands, particularly about *Villa Franca* and *Santerem*. Thus the soil is rendered so exceedingly fertile, that the farmers have often reaped an abundant crop of excellent wheat within the space of fifty days from the time of sowing the grain. And immediately after, Indian corn has been sown in the same ground, and became ripe in nearly the same space of time *.

These inundations, however, are often attended with baneful consequences; for when the overflow is unusually great, the water remains too long on the ground, whereby the corn is either totally destroyed, or greatly injured by mildew. A people even less economical than the ancient Egyptians, would long since have provided a remedy against similar disasters.

* *Vide Luiz Mendes de Vasconcelles in Sitio de Lisboa, and Rafael de Castro in Descripção de Portugal.*

Estavaon Dias Cabral has lately made, by order of government, an accurate survey of about fifteen leagues of the course of this river; an account of which may be seen in the second volume of the *Memorias Economicas* of the Royal Academy of Lisbon. The reeds that grow on its banks near *Santerem*, make writing-pens, and were used as such by the ancient Romans, according to Martial*. Artists prefer such reeds to pens in drawing the outlines of landscapes, figures, and ruins.

The Douro. This noble river ranks next to the Tagus, which it rivals in copiousness of waters. Its source is a large lake, without any apparent supply, in the mountain of *Orbion* in Old Castile; thence it passes nearly due West into Portugal, and falls into the Atlantic Ocean four miles below the city of Oporto, after traversing about 120 leagues. It is navigable for large boats at the distance of about 22 leagues from its mouth. Its progress through Portugal is, for the most part, through deep valleys formed by opposite ridges of lofty mountains. Thus it is contracted into a narrow, deep channel, which, together with the declivity of its bed, render it very rapid at times, especially when augmented by the torrents that flow from the collateral mountains immediately after a heavy fall of rain. These torrents are attended with many inconveniences to the people of Oporto; for, not to mention the impossibility of ships approaching the custom-house, all communication between the inhabitants on the opposite sides of the

* *Nos, Celtas, Maiber, & truces Iberos
Cum desiderio tui petimus:
Sed quæcumque tamen ferentur illic
Piscos calamo Tagi notata
Mæcum pagina nostra nominabit.*

river is suspended for several days together, as no boats can cross it. This inconvenience, however, might be remedied by means of a bridge; and we should naturally expect that the second city of the kingdom, and the capital of so flourishing a province as *Minho*, would not omit an object of such importance. Nature has pointed out the situation in a favourable spot, apparently not more than 300 feet across. It is evident that the construction of a bridge over a river of this breadth would require no extraordinary effort of art.

The *Douro*, like the *Tagus* and the *Pasolus*, was formerly famed for its golden sands. Doctor *Fonseca* says, its waters possess astringent qualities, in consequence of the quantity of tamarisk that grows on its banks. Few rivers exhibit to the eye of the artist more inviting scenes than the *Douro*, in its passage through the province of *Minho* *.

The *Guadiana* takes its rise in New Castile in the territory of *Albambra*, from a lake called *Roidera*, a name which the river bears for about eight leagues from its source, then it disappears and runs seven leagues under ground †. On re-appear-

* The ancient names of the rivers of Ireland and those of Old Galicia, (to which the rivers of *Minho* and *Tras-os-Montes* formerly belonged,) appear to bear a great resemblance.

Rivers of anc. Ireland.	Of anc. Galicia.
<i>Dur.</i>	<i>Dour.</i>
<i>Daurana.</i>	<i>Dourana.</i>
<i>Brigus.</i>	<i>Douro.</i>
<i>Limni.</i>	<i>Brigus, or Brigantius.</i>
<i>Libocus.</i>	<i>Limeas.</i>
<i>Madonus.</i>	<i>Monada.</i>
<i>&c. &c.</i>	<i>&c. &c.</i>

See VALLANCEY'S *Grammar of the Ibero-Celtic*.
Preface, p. xliii.

† The land over this subterranean course is readily distinguished by its perpetual verdure; and hence the Spaniards vaunt of possessing a bridge on which a thousand sheep might constantly graze. The oxen that are fed on the banks of this river have always been famed for their size, as appears by an edict issued by John I. of Castile, in the year 1368, which ordained that no ox should be sold in his dominions for more than 180 *maravedies* *, except those fed on the banks of the *Guadiana*, for which 200 might be demanded.

* 375 *Maravedies* are worth four shillings and eleven pence halfpenny.

ing from its subterranean bed, it takes the name of *Guadiana*, and directs its course from East to West, till it enters Portugal: here it takes a southerly course, dividing ancient Betica from Lusitania, passes through Algarve, and falls into the Atlantic Ocean, after traversing, in all its windings, about 150 leagues.

The Lima is a small river, which has its source in *Villa del Rey* in Galicia; it passes through the province of *Entre Douro e Minho* into the ocean, after a course of about 20 leagues. Pliny relates, that this river was famed for many curious properties; among others, that all who crossed it no longer remembered the former occurrences of their lives, and hence it was called the river of oblivion. So prevalent was this opinion among the common people, that when the Proconsul *Decius Junius Brutus* made war against the people who dwelt on its borders, his army refused to cross it, from a persuasion that it would deprive them of all memory of their children, their wives, and their country; whereupon the Proconsul seized the banners, and having crossed the river, called each of his soldiers by his name, he also began to relate the transactions of Rome; and thus persuaded them to follow him.

The Mondego. The source of this fine river is in the mountain of *Estrella*, in the province of *Beira*, in which province it also finishes its course, after a short progress. Many of those who reside on its banks live by the gold they collect among its sands*. It is navigable from the city of *Coimbra* to the Atlantic Ocean. Its current is so very gentle at times that it appears not to move; but when the snow, which covers its parent mountain, begins to dissolve, it flows with amazing rapidity, and

* *Rafael de Castro in Descripcao de Portugal.*

inundates

inundates the low lands on its borders, sometimes to the no small injury of the neighbouring farmers. It is said to possess the property of whitening the linen washed in it, without the aid of soap or any substitute. It abounds with fish of divers kinds, which are held in high estimation.

The *Minho* was called by the ancients *Minius*, on account of the red colour of its water. Its source is in Gallicia, near the borders of Asturias; from whence it winds its course from East to West into Portugal, and terminates a progress of 37 leagues in the Atlantic Ocean. In its passage through the province of Entre Douro e Minho, it forms the boundary between Gallicia and Portugal. It was probably from some mine on the borders of this river that the *minium** was extracted, of which *Vitruvius* speaks in B. vii. C. 9. where he observes that it was brought from Spain to Rome.

Escura, a lake so called, which is situated on the summit of the mountain of *Estrella*, (see page 12.); its water is of a fable green colour, and of a depth hitherto undetermined. It has never been known to yield fish of any kind. *John Vaseu* gives an account of his having found fragments of ships' masts therein; hence it is supposed to have a subterranean communication with the ocean, notwithstanding its being so far inland; the conjecture appears the more probable, from its being smooth or agitated according as the ocean is tranquil or rough; and it is farther added, that in stormy weather it makes a rumbling noise, that can be heard at the distance of several miles. There is one circumstance, however, that

* By *minium* is understood that dark vermilion colour so admired by the Etrurians; whence it has obtained the name of the *Etruscan* colour among the moderns.

pleads against this opinion, that is, the saltless quality of its water.

Mons. Marvellu, in his travels through Portugal, for the purpose of collecting materials for his natural history, had the curiosity to visit this singular lake, of which he makes mention in his memoirs. Having reached the summit of the mountain, and surveyed the lake, he sent a boy into it, to whom he fastened a cord; when he had swam the distance of 100 yards, there was an evident attraction in the water, as it nearly absorbed him—a phenomenon which he ascribes to some profound, invifible vortex.

Obidos is a lake, situated near a town of the same name in the province of Estremadura; in form it resembles a cross, the longest arm of which extends upwards of two miles. At one end it has a communication with the sea by a narrow gut, which is sometimes so choaked with sand by the northerly winds, that it forms a temporary barrier against the sea. It receives the waters of three streams, which, after accumulating for some time, burst the barrier and precipitate into the ocean. The towns of *Obidos* and *Caldas*, and the neighbouring country, are supplied by this lake with various species of fine fish.

Sapellos. Between Chaves and Monte Alegre, near the village of *Sapellos*, are several lakes, among which there is one famous for its immense depth, insomuch that, like the ocean, it is thought to be unfathomable. It is related that two divers, on examining it, found the water warm near the surface, more temperate lower down, and on descending still lower, they

they found it so intensely cold as to benumb their limbs. This profound lake might be mistaken for the work of nature; were we not assured that it was formerly a gold mine worked by the Romans. It is not above two hundred years since it was dry; for it is recorded that *Machado de Azevedo*, lord of the district, presented the *Infantes D. Fernando, D. Luiz, and D. Henrique*, sons of King *Emanuel*, with three collars that were made of the gold taken out of the same mine.

C H A P. V.

Baths and Mineral Waters.

AMONG the natural curiosities of Portugal, there are none; perhaps, more worthy of observation than its springs, on account of the singular properties they possess. Besides those we are about to mention, there are a great number of others (for they abound in every province,) which we shall omit, either because we think them less deserving of notice, or that the properties ascribed to them do not appear to be sufficiently authenticated.

Caldas da Rainha. These baths have been much frequented of late years by valetudinarians, not only from the different provinces of the kingdom, but also from foreign countries, particularly from Great Britain, all of whom are said to have experienced their salutary effects. They are situated in a small village

village named *Caldas*, in the province of *Estremadura*, about 13 leagues North of the city of Lisbon.

The time is not exactly known when the virtues of these waters were first discovered, but it appears, from different vestiges of ancient baths found here, that they were frequented by the Romans when Lusitania was subject to them. However that was, it is certain that from the beginning of the fifteenth century they have been held in great estimation. Queen *Leonora*, consort of King John II., moved with compassion for the poor who resorted hither, founded, or rather rebuilt an hospital for their reception, in the year 1484, and hence they are called *Caldas da Rainha*, that is to say, the *Queen's baths*.

To the munificence of John V. these baths are indebted for the present hospital, and many other improvements. The accommodation and comfort of the visitants, however, do not as yet appear to be sufficiently provided for. Doctor *Nunes Gago*, who wrote a treatise on the waters of the *Caldas*, wishes there was a fund established to support a number of musicians, in order to recreate the patients during the time of their bathing and drinking of the waters; he also recommends the establishment of places for their amusement and exercise.

The respectable Doctor above mentioned, on analyzing these waters, found them impregnated with the following ingredients, viz,

<i>Iron.</i>	<i>Marine salt.</i>	<i>Selenites.</i>	<i>Fixed air.</i>
<i>The elements of phlogiston.</i>		<i>Absorbent earth.</i>	<i>Argil.</i>

In

In the year 1776 they were analyzed in the laboratory of the university of Coimbra, and found to contain all the above ingredients, except the particles of iron.

Chaves. The baths of this town are considered the best in the kingdom for all nervous complaints; their waters are impregnated with the different minerals through which they pass, as copperas, salt-petre, allum, and sulphur. The Romans frequented these baths, and held them in great estimation for their medicinal qualities.

Aguiar de Sousa. On the top of a mountain, in the parish of *S. Mamede de Val-Longo*, is a deep well, which in summer pours out a stream that runs for many miles, but in winter it becomes quite dry.

Aljustrel. At the distance of half a league from this village is a fountain of water, of so acrimonious a quality that it cannot be drank even by cattle. Taken as a medicine, it operates emetically.

Ançãon. In this town is a fountain, from which issues water that is very cold in summer and lukewarm in winter. It is found by experience to be good for pregnant women; it is also a good nephritic.

Batalha. Near this village is a fountain, whose waters are easily converted into salt.

Braga. Within a short distance of this city, in a garden belonging to a convent of St. Augustin, is a spring, the water of which, during the most intense heat of summer is so exceedingly cold, that the hand cannot be indured in it for the

space of a few minutes without pain. If a bottle containing wine be immersed in this water, it will instantly become changed into vinegar. There are many other springs in Portugal that have a similar effect on wine; such as those of *Covilban*, *Ferrerim*, *Serra da Estrella*, &c.

Cadima. In this village is a celebrated well that absorbs every thing that is cast into it, in consequence of some occult vortex that keeps it in a constant state of agitation. This phenomenon has been mentioned by several naturalists, ancient and modern.

Caldezes. In this village is a well called *Tojal*, whose waters possess Alexipharmic virtues. The pebbles and gravel that are found in it are of a square or cubic form. There is also a well in the town of *Armamar*, which is supposed to communicate similar forms to the pebbles that are found in it.

Friexada, a village in the district of *Miranda*, wherein is a fountain whose water is excessively cold, and so corrosive that in less than an hour it consumes flesh-meat, leaving the bones quite bare. This has been proved by different experiments.

Maffouco. In this village is a spring called *Xido*, which runs only during the spring and summer seasons. The inhabitants have observed, that of a fruitful year it expels very little water; but of an unfruitful one it flows in abundance. Hence the people of the district are accustomed to resort thither as to an oracle inspired with the fate of their harvest.

Santarem. In the neighbourhood of this town is a spring of salt water, notwithstanding its being six leagues distant from the sea.

Estremos.

Estremos. Near this town is a spring, which becomes dry in winter, but pours forth a considerable stream during the summer season. It is of so petrifying a quality, that the wheels of the mills which it works, after a short time, acquire an incrustation of stone. There is another spring called *Fervenças*, situated near the town of *Temtugal*, that has a similar petrifying effect, not only on wood, but also upon flesh and many other substances, as has been proved by repeated experiments.

C H A P. VI.

Mines and Caves.

THE mines of the provinces of *Minho* and *Tras-os-Montes* are certainly the most stupendous works of the ancients existing in Portugal. Were proper surveys of them, illustrated by plans, to be published, they might throw some light on the manner of forming mines, and conveying minerals through subterranean passages; and it is to be hoped, that the Royal Academy of Lisbon, among its other patriotic researches, will not omit so curious and interesting a subject.

In the province of *Tras-os-Montes* is a place, situated in the district of *Alfarella*, called *St. Miguel das tres Minhas*, wherein are seen three immense mines, generally supposed to have been worked by the Romans. The mouth of the largest, which

E

has

has been cut through the live rock, is a mile and a half in circumference, and upwards of 500 feet deep; at the bottom it measures 2400 feet in length, by 1400 in breadth. Part of the mountain through which it is sunk hangs over a river; here, in order to form a communication around the mountain, the impending rock is indented, and a road hewn through it at the height of 70 feet, large enough to admit a cart. In the adjoining vallies are seen heaps of rubbish, which, it is natural to suppose, had been dug out of the mine.

We may conceive with what labour and expence this work had been done, from the great number of subterranean passages pierced through the mountain, and leading from different parts of the great cave in divers directions, in such a manner that it resembles a labyrinth.

About the centre of the mine is a corridore, through which four men can pass abreast. At the distance of twenty paces from the entrance is a lateral passage leading to a large chamber, of such an height that, with the light of torches, the roof could not be perceived. On the right-hand side of this chamber is seen the head of another corridore. Pursuing the first corridore about twenty paces farther, there are found three others, leading to different parts.

Near the above mine is another of considerable dimensions. It is approached by means of a subterranean passage cut through the bottom of the rocky mountain, of width sufficient to admit three carts ranged parallel, and of a proportionate height. Pillars and arches are constructed at certain intervals, where the substructure appeared incompetent to support

support the incumbent weight. At seventy paces distant from the head of this corridore, is a large cave overlaid with water, whereby the interior of the mine cannot be easily explored.

The third mine is in an elevated situation called *Covas*. The length is 2600 feet, and the breadth equal to half the length; the depth is 540 feet. The passage leading to it is similar to the above, but not so large; for it is only six feet broad, by the same height. There are many other mines, caves, cisterns, and subterranean passages in this district, of which there is very little known.

Near the village of *Seixo*, in a place called *Val de Covas*, are seen three caverns, each twenty feet in height. Their length and breadth is very considerable, as may be inferred from their containing olive plantations. The inhabitants generally suppose them to have been gold and silver mines opened by the Romans; and they pretend to shew the vestiges of a canal by which the ore was conducted to the river *Orseira*, three miles distant.

At the bottom of one of these caves is seen the head of a subterranean passage, now almost choaked with rubbish. Those who have entered it affirm that they found large chambers, from which the above passage shapes a descending course, for the space of a mile and half, to the river Douro*.

In a part of the mountain of *Montezinho*, in the province of *Minho*, is a narrow subterranean passage which leads to a cave

* For a more particular description of these mines, see Father *Argote's Antiguidades da Chaz-* cellaria de Braga, whence we have extracted the foregoing account.

of 90 feet in length, by 31 in breadth, and 12 in height. In the two opposite sides of it are seen the entrances of two passages, supposed to have been canals, by which a communication by water was opened to different mines within the mountain, and from thence to the river *Sabor*, distant about a mile and a half. The earth and vegetables about the sides and top of this cave are in a state of petrification.

At a place called *Cachaon da Rapa*, i. e. the Cataract of Rapidity, on the right side of the river Douro, is a stupendous cliff, entirely covered with moss, except about twenty feet in height, by eight in breadth, of its face, which is smooth. Here are seen divers figures, some square, and others of a different form; whether hieroglyphics or letters is not easy to determine. The square figures, for the most part, resemble the chequers of a chess-board; their colour is a dark vermillion, or Etruscan, bordered with a fillet of light blue.

Beneath the above rock is seen a cave resembling a hall, hewn out of the live rock. Stone seats are placed around it, and a table of stone in the centre. In this hall is seen the entrance of a grotto, in which Father *Domingos Mendes*, parish priest of the district, unhappily attempted to penetrate, in the year 1687; having advanced a few paces, he caught some infection that obliged him to return speedily; he was seized with a tremor, his reason forsook him; in a few days he lost his teeth, and soon after his life. The infection is supposed to have been communicated by a bituminous vapour proceeding from the grotto, for in the summer season there is seen oozing from the rock an oleaginous substance resembling bitumen.

C H A P. VII.

Ports and Bays.*

OF the circumference of this kingdom, nearly one half is washed by the Atlantic Ocean; forming a coast of 135 leagues, as before observed (page 1.). On such an extent of coast, we must naturally expect to find many ports; for, besides being the *embouchure* of the four principal rivers of Spain, namely, the *Minho*, the *Douro*, the *Tajo*, and the *Guadiana*, all the rivers that have their sources in the kingdom have also their termination here. Beginning at the Northern extremity, the first port is

Caminha, which is situated at the mouth of the river *Minho*, about 62 leagues North of the city of Lisbon. The harbour is guarded by a fortress, built on a small island; at each side of it is an entrance; that on the North side is difficult of approach. Proceeding towards the South, at the distance of three leagues, we come to

Viana. This port is situated at the mouth of the river *Lima*. The entrance is very narrow, and the harbour at present is so blocked up with sand, that only small vessels can with safety anchor there. The bar is guarded by a fortress, with five bastions and two ravelins.

* What we are about to offer on this head, *Mappa de Portugal*, which is allowed to be the best general account extant.

Esposende.

Espofende. Three leagues South of *Viana*, at the mouth of the river *Cávado*, is the Port of *Espofende*; only small craft can enter, as its bar is scarcely two fathoms deep at high water. The town of *Espofende* and the village of *Faon* are seated on the opposite banks of the river, contiguous to the bar. Here are three rifts of rocks, extending North and South for the distance of half a mile, between which and the main land there is anchorage for large ships, it being five or six fathoms deep at high water. The author of the *Corografia Portuguesa*, tom. i. page 310, thinks it was at this port the fleets of King Solomon took in their loadings of gold. Indeed it is not improbable that anciently it was a port of considerable trade, as the river *Cávado* passes through a territory wherein are found several deep mines, and the vestiges of ancient *Braga*.

Villa do Conde is a port at the mouth of the river *Ave*, whose bar is guarded by a fortress with five bastions, designed by an Italian engineer named *Filippo Terzio*.

Oporto has its entrance about half a league from the city, where the river *Douro* mingles its water with the ocean. Its bar is so very narrow and shallow, that large ships cannot with safety pass it but in summer. The North side is defended by a fortress, with four small bastions. At this port the province of *Minho* ends, and that of *Beira* begins. Continuing our Southerly course, the next port we meet is

Aveiro. Here the river *Vouga* disembogues itself. The bar, which is three leagues distant from the city of *Aveiro*, varies in depth according to the movements of the sand-banks; on an average it is computed to be twenty feet deep at high water.
From

From this bar to the town of Ovar, distant seven leagues, there runs a creek, or canal, formed by a neck of the sea. On its banks are formed pits similar to those at Setuval for manufacturing salt. The land about it is reputed extremely fertile. Proceeding eight leagues farther to the South-east, we come to the bar of

Mondego. The entrance, which is very shallow, is guarded by the fortresses of S. Catherine. Half a league farther up, on the North side of the river Mondego, is the town of *Boarcos*, opposite to which there are six or seven fathoms of water.

Pederneira. Ten leagues South of the above bar, in the province of Estremadura, is situated the bay of *Pederneira*, frequented mostly by fishing-boats. On the summit of a mountain on the North side of it, is a church, dedicated to *Nossa Senhora de Nazareth*, celebrated for the resort of pilgrims and devout persons.

Selir is a small bay two leagues from *Pederneira*. The entrance is through a narrow rift of rocks, inside of which is a well-sheltered cove or bay, upwards of half a league in circumference.

Peniche. Five leagues South-east of *Selir* is the found of *Peniche*. On the North side the water is shallow, but on the South it is six or seven fathoms deep. About six miles from hence, towards the West, are the *Berlengas*, which are two small islands surrounded by many rocks. Proceeding towards the South, at the distance of eleven leagues, we find a small harbour called *Ericeira*; and a short distance from thence, a head-

headland called *Cabo da Roca*, which is within four leagues of the bar of

Lisbon. This bar is guarded by two fortresses, viz. *St. Julian* and *St. Laurence*, or the *Bugio*, which are 980 geometrical paces asunder. Here are two channels through which vessels enter, that between the rocks called *Trafaria* and the *Bugio* fortrefs is pretty secure, being 500 fathoms broad and nine deep. But the other entrance, between the fortrefs of *St. Julian* and the land, is counted very dangerous. Two leagues inside of the bar is a fortified tower called *Bellem*, founded by King Emanuel, on the western side of the bay, about a league below the city of Lisbon.

The annexed View, PLATE II. will convey some idea of this noble bay, and of the tower of Bellem above-mentioned. What an affecting sight this place must have presented on the 9th of July 1497, being the day on which the celebrated Vasco de Gama, and his adventurous companions, took their departure from thence to make the discovery of India. The inhabitants of Lisbon flocked in thousands to witness the scene, and stood in awful amazement on the beach, as the fleet gave its canvass to the wind and vanished from their sight.

Espichel Coasting. South-east from the bar of Lisbon, at the distance of eight leagues, is the Cape of *Espichel*, formerly called the Promontory of *Barbaricus*. On the summit of this mountain is a chapel dedicated to *Nossa Senhora do Cabo*.

Setuval. Four leagues from *Espichel* is the bar of Setuval, which has five fathoms of water at flood, and about three at ebb.



Plate II.

A View of the Bay of Lisbon.

Published by G. & D. Dutton, Aug. 1799.

ebb. Inside of the bay is an extensive and secure harbour, where the river *Zadaon* mingles its water with a branch of the ocean.

Sines. Fifteen leagues from the above bar, in the province of Algarve, is the port of Sines, where there is a safe anchorage in ten or fifteen fathoms of water. Three leagues from hence is a small island called *Peffigueiro*, not far from the shore. Beyond this, two leagues, is the port of *Odemira*, frequented only by small craft. Having passed *Arrifana*, we arrive at the Cape of St. Vincent, which is distant about forty leagues from the rock of Cintra.

Sagres is a fine bay, with fourteen fathoms of water, situated a league East of Cape St. Vincent. Here the great Pharos of navigation Prince Henry resided, and planned those voyages and discoveries which gave a beginning to the present unbounded commerce of Europe.

Lagos. This port is capable of receiving large vessels, as it has seven or eight fathoms of sounding. Its entrance is guarded by a fortress called *Bandeira*. Not far from *Lagos* is the bay of *Alvor*.

Villa-Nova de Portimao. The entrance to this port is so choaked with moving sand-banks, that it is not safe to attempt passing it without the aid of an experienced pilot. The bar, which is guarded by two fortresses, has about 18 feet of water at high tide, and 10 at low.

Albofeira is a bay between two large and opposite capes, on one of which is a fortress. East of this is the harbour of

Faro; and five leagues farther East is the port of *Tavera*, whose bar is defended by a fortress. Finally, we come to

Castro-Marim, which is situated at the mouth of the river Guadiana, that separates Algarve from Andalusia. This is the last port on the South-East coast of Portugal.

C H A P. VIII.

State of Agriculture.

THE Portuguese, for ages past, have not attended so seriously to the industry of their country as they do at present. Experience has at length taught them the necessity of domestic œconomy but too long neglected; and that agriculture is of infinitely more importance to them than their mines of gold and silver. These delusive sources of wealth begin to fall into disrepute among the people, in proportion as they compare the state of their country with that of others, whose revenues depend not on foreign mines, but on the productions of their native soil.

The Royal Academy of Lisbon has contributed not a little, by its researches, its writings, and premiums, to excite a spirit of industry throughout the kingdom. This illustrious body, viewing, with laudable emulation, the flourishing commerce of foreigners, have assembled for the avowed purpose of promoting

moting the œconomy of their country, in the formation of roads and canals, the invention of machines, the drainage of marshes, the improvement of harbours, and the advancement of arts, navigation, and commerce. But, as an enlightened member of that Academy has justly observed, all writings, all projects for the attainment of these great objects, must eventually prove abortive, unless proper laws be enacted to promote agriculture, and to nerve the feeble hand of the despised and oppressed peasant.

In former times, when the plough was honoured in Portugal, particularly under *Sancho I.* and *II.* and the great *Diniz*, the friend of the husbandman, it appears, that the nation produced corn in abundance; not only for the consumption of its inhabitants, but also for exportation. To trace the decline of agriculture from those days, and define the causes of its present abject state, are subjects not unworthy the patriot; and perhaps not undeserving a few words in this place.

As to its decline, let it suffice to observe, that it began with the first expeditions to Africa, and rapidly followed the conquests and discoveries in Asia and America. Nor did the treasures of these countries offer but an inadequate compensation for the accumulated evils they entailed on the nation; treasures of which the Portuguese had but a temporary possession, as they were under the necessity of bartering them for the homely productions of their neighbours.

The substitution of artificial for real wealth, the incessant drain of population, and the suspension of industry, added to the growth of feudal privileges, which shackled the indus-

trious peasant, at length reduced the country to so deplorable a state, that agriculture sunk into utter neglect, and every thing appertaining to it shared the same fate.

Such have partly been the causes of the decline of husbandry in this kingdom; and among the physical and moral causes that still impede its advancement are the following:

1. The distribution of the land into large estates.
2. The destruction of the roads, and the obstruction of the rivers.
3. The great inundations of the rivers, through want of embankment and canals.
4. The want of means to cultivate the land.
5. The paucity of labourers and cattle.
6. The numbers that enter into religious orders.
7. The multitude of holidays.
8. The number of servants and vagrants.
9. The ignorance of the farmers.
10. The desertion of their children to cities, and their entering on occupations distinct from husbandry.
11. The heavy incumbrances and impositions to which they are subject.
12. The contempt in which the cultivators of the soil are held.
13. The extraordinary oppressions which they sometimes experience under the administration of wicked ministers.
14. The miserable manner in which the peasantry in general are reared; content merely to vegetate, they seek not for the comforts nor conveniences of life; thus enfeebled, they

they must consequently want strength to work, and many of them be deterred from marrying on account of their wretched condition.

Unless these obstacles be removed, it is vain to expect that agriculture can flourish. According to the best information, two-thirds of the kingdom are at present left untilled, and the portion that is under vines, olives, corn, pulse, wood, &c. is not in general in that state of improvement of which it is susceptible, nor in which it had been in the time of King Diniz.

The olive plantations in general are left uncultivated, and the vines very often occupy lands better appropriated to the growth of corn or maize.

Woods are rarely planted anew, and the old want that attention necessary to preserve and improve them.

Flax is not cultivated in quantity sufficient for domestic consumption; and the growth of hemp is almost entirely neglected.

The culture of potatoes is very little known in the kingdom; on the contrary, *Vermelhas* *, which are less farinaceous and nutritive, are planted in many parts.

The farmers are prejudiced in favour of the antiquated notion, that every kind of soil is equally competent for the growth of all kind of vegetables, which certainly is very injurious to agriculture.

* *Helianthus tuberosus*.

Meadows are in a manner unknown in the kingdom, except in the province of Minho, notwithstanding there are many fine vallies, well calculated for that purpose, suffered to remain in a desert state.

As to what regards the preparation of the soil, it is wretched beyond description; the plough moves almost on the surface, the ground is seldom harrowed, however stiff it be, nor is it properly cleansed of weeds or stones; besides, the grain is sown immediately after ploughing, without giving the earth time to absorb the fertilising particles of the atmosphere.

The manure commonly used has very little substance, for, it being made of heath and furze which are scattered about the high-roads to rot, the rain carries off most of the saline and oleaginous particles, two of the principal sources of fertilization.

As the greatest part of the lands are mountainous, it often happens that the crops are destroyed for want of proper care, by the torrents that succeed a heavy fall of rain.

C H A P. IX.

Vegetable and Animal Productions.

LUIZ NUNEZ, in his account of Lusitania, compares the territory of Santerem, near Lisbon, to Sicily for the growth of corn; and other authors affirm, that if the marshes about the same territory were drained and guarded against the too great inundations of the Tagus, they might supply corn for half Lisbon. The best wheat is grown in Alentejo. Many of the inhabitants in the other provinces, instead of wheat flour, use the flour of Indian corn, chefnuts, barley, and rye.

The wines of Portugal, in general, are very little known among foreigners, except those of *Oporto*, *Carcavelo*, and *Lisbon*; the following are reputed very precious wines, viz. *Alvor*, *Villa de Frades*, *Vidigueira*, *Cuba*, *Peramanca*, *Alcochete*, *Almada*, *Caparica*, *Camarate*, *Ourem*, *Lamego*, *Monção*. The *Barra a Barra* is in great request among the curious in wines.

Few countries produce more oil, with so little care and cultivation, than Portugal; and if it be not esteemed equal to that of other parts of Europe, the fault, perhaps, ought not to be ascribed to any natural imperfections, but to the want of art in the making.

Fruits of every kind known in Europe grow here, in many places, almost spontaneously:—oranges, lemons, figs, raisins, citrons, apricots, peaches, melons, almonds, &c.

A re-

A remarkably large cherry, of a fine flavour, grows in *Lamego* and *Borba*; it is called *Ginja Garrifa*.

Among the esculent roots, the turnips are to be admired for their size. *Faria* says, that the inhabitants, in some parts of the northern provinces, make stools of them. The qualities of the onions and garlick are thought to be as great attractives to the modern Jews, as those of Egypt were to the ancient Israelites.

It would be endless to enumerate the various plants and flowers of the kingdom. Of their diversity the reader may form some idea, from Mr. Vandelli's Essay on the Plants of Portugal. The plenty and excellence of the honey and wax are to be ascribed to the variety of sweet herbs with which the country abounds.

Among the vegetable productions, a great deal of cream of tartar is exported in its crude state to England, where it is prepared, and thence sent back to Portugal in a purified state for medicinal purposes.

From the tender quality of the flax, the linen has a peculiarly soft texture, well adapted for making printing paper.

Of rushes are made curious mats, which many spread on their floors in preference to carpets.

Esparto has been lately discovered in Algarve, not inferior to that cultivated by the Spaniards for making ropes.

Of

Of the *Chenopodium maritimum*, which is found in many parts of the sea-coast, might be made barilha similar to that of Alicant.

For the purpose of dying there are various plants; besides those of the colonies, the following, according to Mr. Vandel, grow in the kingdom:

Garanca^a or *Rubia*, a species of *Pastel*, proper to the kingdom^b. *Tournefol*^c. *Lirio dos Tintureiros*^d. *Caralina*^e. *Giesta dos Tintureiros*^f. *Nogueira*^g. *Sumagre*^h. *Celidonia maior*ⁱ. The roots of various species of *Galios*^k. The herb *Leiteira*^l. The *Arruda*^m. The *Tojo*ⁿ. The *Sanguinho*^o. The little *Carvalho das Charnecas*^p. The *Pecogueiro*^q. The *Damafqueiro*^r. The *Cerejeira*^s. The *Funcho*^t. The *Impossfide*^u. The *Marmeleiro*^v. The *Ofride*^w. The *Estevas*^x. The *Alemo*^y. And many species of *Lichenes*^z, which may supply the place of orchel-weed.

For an account of the several medicinal plants, some of which are indigenous and others exotic, we refer the reader to the *Flora Lusitanica*.

^a *Rubia tinctorum*.

^b *Ispatis Lusitanica*.

^c *Croton tinctorum*.

^d *Reseda luteola*.

^e *Carlina corymbosa*.

^f *Genista tinctoria*.

^g *Juglans*.

^h *Rhus coriaria*.

ⁱ *Chelidonium majus*.

^k *Gallium aparine*, and other species.

^l *Euphorbia lathyris*.

^m *Ruta graveolens*.

ⁿ *Ulex europaeus*.

^o *Rhamnus alaternus*.

^p *Quercus nana*.

^q *Amygdalus Persica*.

^r *Prunus Damascena*.

^s *Prunus Cerasus*.

^t *Anethum graveolens*.

^u *Cytinus hypocistis*.

^v *Pyrus Cydonia*.

^w *Ofris alba*.

^x *Cistus crispus*, *ladanifera*.

^y *Betula alnus*.

^z *Lichen*.

The cows breed very slowly for want of pasture; hence butter, cheese, and milk are exceedingly scarce. The inhabitants of Lisbon use goat's milk with their tea; and I have known some Portuguese who preferred the juice of sweet oranges in their tea to the best cream.

The oxen, I am inclined to think, are better and more numerous than is generally supposed. I have seen many of them in the northern parts of Estremadura that were not inferior in size to those of Lincolnshire.

The horses, for want of pasture and proper attendance, are but few in number, and not very good, notwithstanding the laws and regulations existing for increasing and perfecting their species. Had the breed of former times been as slow-paced as the present, the ancients would not have invented the allegory of the Lusitanian mares generating by the wind. The mules are very hardy, strong, and sure-footed.

The sheep, at present, are not very numerous, which is attributed, partly to the want of pasture, and partly to the numbers that die for want of veterinary assistance; nor is the breed so good as formerly, on account of the strain not being sufficiently crossed.

The goats multiply but slowly, by reason of being kept in places not suited to their instinct. Mr. Vandelli recommends, in imitation of the Swedes, the importation of the breed of *Angora*, for the excellent quality of their hair for making camelots.

Large herds of swine are found in various parts of the country, feeding chiefly on grass and acorns; hence proceeds

the excellence of their flesh, and the preference given to Portuguese hams in most parts of Europe, particularly in England.

C H A P. X.

Minerals.

PORTUGAL, in ancient times, appears to have been as celebrated for its gold and silver mines, as South America is at present. Its mineral treasures are supposed to have been the principal objects that invited thither the Phrygians, Phœnicians, Carthagenians, and Romans. The last must have drawn immense riches from the number of mines they sunk in the kingdom, whose caverns appear to this day at *Minho*, *St. Mamede Val-Longo*, *Aguar de Sousa*, *Villa-Verde*, *Grandola*, *Alferrelas*, *Tras-os-Montes*, &c.

The sovereigns of Portugal formerly granted great privileges to such as worked in the mines, as we find by an ordinance of King Deniz in favour of those who were employed in the gold mines of *Adiffa*, near the mouth of the Tagus. In the reign of King Emanuel these privileges became extinct, in consequence of the discovery of India; and from that time the mines of Portugal have been neglected.

Veins of gold ore may be traced in the mountains of *Goes* and *Estrella*. In the rivers that issue from the latter is found much gold; and also in the river *Sabor*. Pure gold was formerly gathered in the sands of the *Tagus*. King John III. had a sceptre made of it, which is still preserved in the royal treasury.

A mine of silver was worked in the village of *Paramio*, two leagues from *Bragança*, in the year 1628. It was so productive, that the duty to the crown amounted annually to 256 pounds weight.

The rich metallic mines of *Montezinbo*, near *Bragança*, were worked by the ancients, as appears by the many heaps of *scoriae* still to be seen about the mountain.

There are lead mines in *Murfa* and *Lamego*; from a hundred weight of ore, lately taken out of the latter, have been extracted sixty pounds of lead, besides silver. The lead mines of *Cogo* yielded forty-eight pounds in a hundred weight.

Mines of fine tin may be seen in *Amarante*, *Bouzella*, *S. Pedro do Sul*, *Belmonte*, *Bragança*, and *Vizeu*. There is also one in the district of *Monforte*, of which Pliny makes mention.

In the district of *Miranda* there was formerly a royal manufactory of pewter, which is now abandoned.

The iron mines are well known, but, at the same time, they are not converted to use; those of *Machuco*, on the banks of the river *Zezere*, are neglected for want of wood. There are
others

others at *Coimbra*, on the coast of *Caon*, *Busaco*, *Carvalho*, *Pernes*, and *Cintra*. In the last have been found magnets. There are other species of iron ores in *Alentejo*. On the sea-shore we frequently meet iron sands; at *Buarcos* is a conglutinated bank of this sand, from which Mr. Vandelli says he has extracted excellent iron.

Emery is found near the Douro, and also in the district of *Torre de Mençorvo*, from which a quantity was extracted by Dominick Martins of the Oporto Company.

Near *Elvas* is a mine of copper. In an experiment made not long since, a hundred weight of the ore yielded twenty-three pounds and a quarter of fine copper. One *Bacharel Fragozo*, a Portuguese, lately discovered copper mines in *Portalegre*. In a place called *Botones*, near *Coimbra*, there is every appearance of a copper mine.

Coal has been found in different parts. One of the richest veins appears to be that of *Buarcos*, from whence the royal iron-foundry at Lisbon is supplied. "In purifying some of this coal," (says Mr. Vandelli,) "after the English manner, for the use of the chymical elaboratory at Coimbra, I extracted from it bitumen, and a thick oil, which may serve the purpose of tar."

The thickness of the above vein of coal is about three feet six inches, but increases in proportion as it sinks. As yet it has not been found sufficiently bituminous; and therefore, when used in forges, it excoriates the iron, a defect ascribed to the mine's not being sunk sufficiently deep.

Along

Along the sea-coast from *Buarcos* to *Figueira*, and on the banks of the river *Mondego*, are found veins of pit-coal; and also near *Leiria* is to be seen a very large vein. In *Porto de mos* a rich mine was recently discovered.

One great obstacle to the working of the mines of this kingdom is the want of wood; government, being apprised of this, begin to pay more attention to the augmentation and regulation of the forests, to reduce the consumption of wood and increase that of coal.

In divers parts are found beautiful marbles, some of which have been applied to useful purposes; as those of *Estremos*, *Arabida*, *Mafra*, *Oeyras*, and *Leiria*. Some veins of a superior quality have been lately found at *Lagarteira* and *Ega*.

The mountain of *Pedra de Alvidrar* in *Colares* contains layers of white marble, resembling *Parian* or *Carrara*. Specimens of these, and a variety of other Portuguese marbles, have been collected by *Julio Martiazzi* for the museum of his Royal Highness the Prince of Brazil.

Of the many valuable granites of *Goes*, &c. no use whatever is made; nor of the agates of *Tagarro*, nor of the petrified woods of *Pombal*; nor of the *mica membranacea* of *Oporto*, similar to that of which the Russians make what is called *Muscovy glass*.

Doctor *de Sá* extracted a large quantity of *amianthus asbestus* from one of the mines of *Rodella*; there are other mines of it
at

at *Murfa*, of which Doctor Vandelli recommends incombustible paper to be made for the use of the artillery.

In the mountains of *Sueiras*, near *Bellas*, are found, in the interfices of basaltic rocks, layers of *amiantus*, which resemble pasteboard, they are more flexible than the *amiantus* lately imported from Brazil.

A species of puzzolana is found in the mountains contiguous to Lisbon on the Western side, which is not inferior to that of Italy for building in water; in parts it is found resolved into clay, of which pottery is made.

“Flints abound in different parts of the kingdom, particularly in the calcareous banks of *Alcantara*, among which we meet some with coloured veins that may serve for making boxes and other toys; but especially for fabricating English *China*, commonly made of calcined stones. I have ordered some patterns of it to be made, by mixing with this flint a portion of argil. *Felt spat* is frequently met in various parts of *Serra da Estrella*; I ordered a quantity of white argil to be mixed with it, and of the composition were made some patterns of very transparent porcelain. These are the ingredients of which the porcelain of Saxony is made *.”

Argils of different kinds are very common; which, when prepared, serve to make porcelain; quantities of it might be extracted from the fusible spalt of the mountain of *Estrella*.

In *Soure*, besides a great quantity of white and red bole, is found argil for making crucibles and other chymical vessels.

* Vandelli.

At *Coimbra* also there is a clay, of which pottery is made that resists the fire.

"From *Guimerans* I had fullers' earth, better than that of the English, the exportation of which is prohibited on pain of death *."

In many places are seen white, red, and yellow argils. The *terra verde*, valuable for painting, has been lately discovered near *Busaco*, and the *terra sombra* at *Cintra*, and also near *Soure*.

In the neighbourhood of *Lisbon* and other places are heaps of calx.

Epsom salt is found at *Monterrojo de Coimbra*, and also near *Lisbon*. *Magnesia* is gathered from the *residuum* of sea-water from which salt has been extracted, as Mr. *Vandelli* has experienced.

Great quantities of *copperas* might be extracted from the pyrites of *Punbeti*, *Torres Vedras*, &c.

Among the sulphurs may be ranked the above mines of pyrites; and from those which are near the coal mines of *Buarcos* might be extracted allum. In *Cintra*, upon the sinking of a well, was found virgin sulphur.

Bituminous woods (fossils) have been found in *Torres Vedras*, *Mont-axique*, *Cezimbra*, *Cabo*, *Villa verde*, *Condexa*, *Ourim*, *Carapinkeira*, *S. Martinho*, and *Louzaon*, containing white pyrites, from which arsenic has been extracted.

* *Vandelli*.

A mine of arsenic was discovered a few years ago in *Serra da Estrella*. The neighbourhood of *Castello-Branco* is well known for its mines of mercury.

There are mines of antimony and manganese in *Murça*, and of bismuth in *Lamego*.

Precious stones of every shade are to be met with here; crystals are found at *Portalegre*, and in many other parts. Amethysts at *Gerez*, aquamarina in *Serra da Estrella*, jacinths in the rivers *Cavádo* and *Bellas*, rubies at *Algarve*, turkoises in the mountain of *Outeira*.

In order to shew in a few words the riches of the country, I shall add the following passage from the learned *Theses Universæ Philosophiæ* of *Luiz Antonio Furtado de Mendoga*, Viscount de *Barbacena*, as maintained by him in the university of *Coimbra*.

Cum nihil in naturâ sit supervacaneum, omnia ejus producta quantum licet, cognita, atque explorata esse debent; nosque præsertim huic studio incumbere oportet, qui regionem incolimus, quæ tot nova, tamque utilia profert, ne ab exteris supplices emamus, quæ gratis domi fundit patria. Ipsa enim præter alia omnibus notissima, quæ hic non referam, aliæque nondum detecta nobis suppeditat Argentum^a. Ferrum^b. Cuprum^c. Stannum^d. Plumbum^e. Mercurium^f. Antimonium^g. Arsenicum^h. Auripigmentumⁱ. Lithantracem, seu Carbonem Mineralem^k. Bitumen

^a In the lead mines of *Murça*.

^b In various parts of Portugal, as *Maçuco*, *Espinhaço de Caon*, near *Coimbra*, *Carvalho*, &c. In *Angola*, *Piaubi*, and other parts of Brazil.

^c Near *Elvas*, and in Brazil.

^d In *Serra da Estrella*.

^e In *Fizeo*, and in *Murça*.

^f In *Castello-Branco*.

^g In *Castello-Branco*.

^h In *Goes*.

ⁱ In Brazil.

^k In *Boarcos*, *Esfit*, and *Porto de Moz*.

Gagas^a. Bitumen Ampellitem^b. Picem mineralem^c. Vitriolum Ferri^d. Allumen^e. Nitrum^f. Magnesiam^g. Marmora Nobiliora^h. Gypsumⁱ. Saxum Porphyrium, Granitem, Silecem Jaspidem^k. Achatem^l. Terras pro Pictura^m. Terram pro vasis murrhynisⁿ. Argillam Fullonicam^o. Argillam Margam^p. Quercum Gallam^q. Sericum^r. Coccinellam^s. Salitos, & exsiccatos Pifces^t. Butyrum, & Caseum^u. Tartarum^v. Indigoferam, seu Indacum^x. Piper^y. Laurum Cinnamomum^z. Solam Sativam, & Chenopodium Maritimum^{aa}, e quibus Sal Sodæ, Resedam Luteolam, Rubiam Tinctorum^{bb}. Orysam^{cc}. Pombaliam Ipecacuanba^{dd}, pleraque remedia, spilegiam, Anthelmiam^{ee}, aliasque utilissimas plantas jam cognitatas, & in usum adductas, quarum tamen cultura Agricolis, ple-

^a In the coal mines of Boarcos, Espit, Porto de Moz.

^b Near Soure.

^c In Angola.

^d In Boarcos.

^e In Boarcos and Piaubi.

^f In Babia, Para, and other parts of Brazil.

^g It might be extracted in abundance from the water which remains in the salt-pits after the last chrySTALLIZATION, and made a branch of our commerce.

^h In Tapeos, Lagarteira, Porto de Moz, Estremos, Montes-Claros, and other parts of Portugal.

ⁱ Near Soure, and at Coimbra.

^k In Bugace, and Carvalbo.

^l In Monte Rodondo.

^m In Brazil, in Portugal, and in some of its colonies.

ⁿ In Soure.

^o In the island of St. Michael.

^p Near Lisbon.

^q In some uncultivated parts of Portugal in Quercus Nana.

^r In Para, and other parts of Brazil, from a species of silk-worm.

^s In Brazil, principally in Rio de Janeiro and in Para.

^t In the Terceira Islands, and in Cape Verde.

^u In Portugal, and in Brazil.

^v It is very common in Portugal, being found upon the interior sides of the wine vessels. It is much used in the arts and for medicinal purposes; it is easily purified; from it is extracted abundance of vegetable alkali.

^x A plant that grows in Brazil and in Cape Verde.

^y In the island of St. Thomas.

^z In Brazil and the island of St. Thomas.

^{aa} Plants peculiar to the sea-coasts of Portugal.

^{bb} A Portuguese plant.

^{cc} In Maranhon.

^{dd} A plant peculiar to Brazil.

^{ee} A plant peculiar to Brazil; great advantage might accrue to our commerce from this plant, as will appear by the following words of the celebrated Linnæus in his letter to my preceptor Doctor Vandelii. *Archiatri Petropolitani comparant sibi spelegiam meam, eaque curavit stupende vermes quoscunque; dosis herba venit ducato uno. Tu qui habitas in Lusitania, quibus paret Brasilia, ubi spontanea, posses comparare ingentem copiam, & vendere summo lucro per Europam; emptores nunquam deficerent, nec potest cum lucro in hortis coli cum fervidissimum expetit cælum: hac sola posses tibi comparare thesauros.*

rumque

rumque imperitis, tantummodo demandata ab Historia Naturali maximum incrementum accipere potest: quæ omnia, & alia quamplurima felices Lusitani possidemus, & quæ deficiunt, ut Thea Myristica, Caryophyllus facili negotio possent in Brasilia coli, uti hodie Coffea Orientalis, quæ quondam fuit solitus Arabiæ Thesaurus.

C H A P. XI.

Population and Industry.

OF the population of Portugal, it is impossible to speak with certainty, since no exact account of it has yet appeared. In the first volume of the *Memorias Economicas* of the Royal Academy of Lisbon, published in 1789, we find three different opinions on this head; *Joaquim de Barros** rates the inhabitants at 3,724,900; *Henriques de Selveira*† at 2,500,000; and Mr. *Vandelli*‡, who is very seldom incorrect, estimates them at 2,000,000.

* *Sobre as causas da differente populaçaõ de Portugal, em diversos tempos da monarchia, Memorias Economicas, tom. i. page 138.*

† *Sobre a agricultura, &c. da provincia de Alentejo. Ibid. page 105.*

‡ *Sobre a preferencia que em Portugal, se deve dar á agricultura sobre as Fabricas. Ibid. page 246.* This list, with illustrations, *de Barros* says, was communicated to him by *Don Diego de Neronba*, late ambassador from the court of Lisbon to that of Rome.—He farther adds, that it is indebted to the researches of *Senhor*

Ignacio de Pina Manique, the present intendent of police at Lisbon. Now, granting for a moment that the statement be correct, there is a mistake apparently in rating each house at five persons as *de Barros* has done. In proof of this we refer the reader to two surveys published in the third volume of the *Memoirs* of the Royal Academy (pages 152 and 289); one of the territory about the river *Douro*, the other of *Torre de Moncorvo* and its district. The former states, that there are 44,670 souls in 13,895 houses; the latter, 6109

2,000,000. "It is true," says he, "that others state them at more, but as we have no exact survey of the provinces, I think that number might be considered as the most probable."

When writers of the first information on Portuguese affairs differ so widely on this point, it amounts to a proof that there is no exact *census* of the kingdom. *De Barros*, indeed, informs us, that in the year 1776, the total number of houses amounted to 744,980. But as he does not mention by what means this list was ascertained, its accuracy cannot reasonably be depended on, and consequently all calculations founded upon it as a *datum* must be subject to error, or at least to doubt; therefore, until the question be decided by some correct survey, we shall adhere to the general opinion which states the population at about 2,500,000 *. The number of *Portuguese* in all the colonies appertaining to the Crown are estimated at 900,000.

Of these two millions and a half the females are estimated at 1,500,000; the aged at 50,000; the children at 300,000; the peasantry, labourers, and those employed in mechanic arts of every description at 600,000 †.

De Sequeira, the writer above mentioned, rates the labour of each of these 600,000 at 100 reis *per diem*. Hence he shews the loss

6109 souls in 1817 houses; if we take a mean between both statements, each house does not contain, on an average, quite three and a quarter, to speak in the language of finance. We grant, however, that this number is too small for the average of the kingdom; if we say four persons to each house, perhaps it is not far from the truth.

* For the supposed population of each province, see the table, page 10.

N. B. According to a survey made two years after the unfortunate expedition of King Sebastian, the total population of the kingdom did not amount to one million.

† *Memorias Economicas*, tom. i. page 105.

the

the nation sustains from a multitude of holidays, and recommends twenty-three to be struck off the list, by which a saving would accrue to the state of 3,045,000 crusades *per annum*, that is, 342,562 l. 10s. sterling, without computing the industry of 200,000 women of the Northern provinces.

The grain most generally cultivated in the nation is maize; nearly two-thirds of the inhabitants are supposed to derive their principal sustenance from this useful production, though the culture of it appears, from the statement of *Senhor Villa Nova**, to be less profitable than that of wheat in the district he alludes to. The profits accruing from a *geira* of land, that is 240 feet in length, by 120 in breadth, under wheat being 1200 reis; and that of the same quantity of land under maize 1000 reis.

On the culture of vines the last-mentioned writer has the following observations: A *geira* of land will rear a thousand vine-roots, which, on average, yield annually a pipe of wine commonly valued at - - - 12,000 reis.

			<i>Reis.</i>
Expence of cultivation	-	6,000	
Imposts	-	1,045	
Contingencies	-	955	
		<hr/>	8,000

Net profit on a *geira* of land planted with vines 4,000.

Hence it is not to be wondered at that the Portuguese neglect the culture of grain for that of wine, as it appears from this statement to be nearly four times as productive as either wheat or maize.

* *Vide Memorias Economicas, tom. iii. pag. 323.*

A GENERAL VIEW OF THE

In the district of *Torre de Moncorvo*, in the province of *Tras-os-Montes*, the following were the prices of the undermentioned articles in the year 1790:

Wheat	-	-	Reis. 300	} <i>per Alqueire.</i>
Rye	-	-	200	
Maize	-	-	240	
Barley	-	-	120	
Beans	-	-	300	
Peas	-	-	480	
Chestnuts	-	-	60	} <i>per Almude.</i>
Wine	-	-	480	
Oil	-	-	2,400	
Wool	-	-	2,400	} <i>per Arroba.</i>
Cheese	-	-	2,000	
Flax	-	-	2,500	
Hemp	-	-	700	
Almonds	-	-	1,600	
Raw silk	-	-	89,600	

Formerly the Portuguese imported rice from Carolina to a very large amount; at present they are supplied from Brazil.

Among the exotic plants introduced into Portugal, one of the most singular and valuable appears to be the *Mamoniera*, or *Ricino*, which was lately brought from Brazil. An account of it is given in the third volume of the *Memorias Economicas*, by *Vincent de Seabra*; who observes that its fruit yields a greater quantity

quantity of oil than that of the olive tree, is extracted with much less trouble, and for most æconomic purposes is not inferior to oil of olives.

Of the rind of a tree that grows in Brazil, called by the natives *Guaxima*, are made ropes and cables, not inferior to those of hemp.

An account of the cochineal of Brazil was published by *Joaquim de Castro* in the year 1790.

The culture and manufacture of cotton in Brazil has received great improvement from several Portuguese naturalists. The late celebrated Father *Loureiro* has written a very interesting memoir on the subject.

The culture of indigo in the colonies has also received considerable improvement. It is now imported in quantity sufficient not only for the manufactories of the nation, but also for foreign commerce. *Antonio das Neves* published, in the year 1788, an account of a new manner of making indigo at a small expence.

Among the best writers on the æconomy and industry of Portugal, are *Vandelli*, *Loureiro*, *Manoel Ferreira*, *Manoel Baptista*, *Alvares da Silva*, *Joaquim de Barros*, *Jose de Andrada*, *Antonio de Villa-Nova*, *Jose Ferreira*, *Antonio Silveira*.

The number of manufactories in the kingdom are computed at 230. The silk manufactories alone employ about 27,000 persons.

The

The woollen manufactories of *Covilham*, *Portalegre*, and *Azeiton* have received great improvement in the present reign.

A manufactory for hats, and another for paper, have been lately established at Lisbon.—A specimen of isinglass was produced here a few years ago, not inferior to that of Russia.

Besides the silk-worms that are cultivated at *Guarda*, *Bragança Menorvo*, there is found in Brazil a wild kind of worm, which, without culture, produces a strong silk of the colour of coffee; and also a species of spider, that produces large balls of excellent white silk.—Some of these spiders have been brought to Lisbon.

A Board was established at Lisbon a few years ago, under the following title, *Real Junta do Commercio, Agricultura, Fabricas, e Navigacao destes Reinos e seus Dominios*; that is, The Royal Board of Commerce, Agriculture, Manufactures, and Navigation of these Kingdoms and their Dominions. The prime-minister for the time being is president and inspector-general thereof.

A manufactory of woollen cloths, established in the city of *Portalegre*, was granted by an *Alvara*, dated the 22d of April 1788, to *Anselmo Joze de Cruz Sobral*, and *Gerardo Braamcamp de Almeida Castello Branco*, for the term of twelve years.

Other cloth manufactories have been set up in the towns of *Covilham* and *Fundaon*, which, by an *Alvara* of the third of June 1788, were granted for the term of twelve years, to a company of four people, on certain conditions, tending solely to promote them.

I shall close this chapter with a few observations made by an eminent Portuguese writer on the industry of that country.

“ Were the ewes of Portugal perfected with care similar to those of the English or Spanish, and some imported from Africa and Angora for the camelot manufactories, the wool-len cloths of this country might be improved and rendered equal to those of the English. It is extraordinary, that notwithstanding the care taken to improve our cloth manufactories, none of them has yet arrived to that state of perfection in which they were in the time of Count *da Ericeira*, who is not improperly called the *Colbert* of Portugal; for then the country stood not in need of the manufactures of foreigners.

“ In order to increase and perfect the cast of ewes, let pasture-grounds be made; limit the exportation of wool, but do not totally prohibit it, thus our manufactures will arrive to perfection, and we shall not be under the necessity of importing those of other nations.

“ As the seas and coasts of the kingdom abound with fish, were this branch of industry protected, we might supply the place of the many cargoes received from abroad.

“ Fish oil might be deprived of a great part of its disagreeable smell and smoke by washing, as I have proved by experiment; and thus it becomes fitter for use, and also for adulterating lintseed oil, a practice not uncommon among foreigners.

" Of the air vessels of various fishes might be made good
" ifinglafs, in the manner mentioned by *M. Pallas* in his
" travels through Siberia.

" On the coasts of Portugal are found some little *murices* or
" shells, which yield a species of purple like that of the
" Tyrians, and in greater quantity we observe that it is
" yielded by a sea-worm called *lebre marinba*; but I have not
" tried whether this colour be permanent.

" On our coasts are also found fine *spunges*, and some frag-
" ments of red coral.

" According to an *Alvara* of the 16th of April 1462, there
" was at *Sylves* in *Algarve* a coral fishery, which was renewed
" in the year 1711, as attested by his Excellency Count *de Re-*
" *xende*, when he was governor of that kingdom.

" Among insects, the cultivation of silk-worms claims the
" first attention. Of this his Excellency the Marquis d'*Alorna* has
" set an example worthy of imitation; through his provident
" care fine silks and satins are now manufactured at *Almeirim*.

" A manufactory of woollen cloths also engages part of the
" attention of the above illustrious patriot. Were the rest of
" our noblemen and gentlemen to imitate his example, useful
" industry might be promoted, and we should not have to
" envy our neighbours, whom, in this respect, we should
" in a short time surpass.

" The *Kermes* grain of *Algarve* would be found very useful
" were its growth increased. And were the manner of dying
" red

“red from a species of wild plant (*cimex hyoscyami*) found in various parts of the kingdom known, it would form a new branch of industry.”

C H A P. XII.

Commerce.

THE commerce of Portugal, at the present day, compared with what it was at the beginning of this century, must be allowed to be in a very flourishing state. The reign of Joseph I. formed a new epocha, not only in the commerce of the kingdom, but in the general system of its political œconomy. Since then the trade of the English with the Portuguese has rapidly declined; owing partly to the concessions made by the latter to other nations, and partly to the improvements they have made in their own commerce and manufactures.

It appears by the registers of the custom-house of Lisbon, that in the years 1774 and 1775, the commerce of the English with that capital alone exceeded double the aggregate commerce of all other nations. In the year 1785, the amount of the trade of Portugal with great Britain and Ireland, according to the statement of the Portuguese, stood as follows:

Trade of Portugal with England in the year 1785.

<i>Imports.</i>	<i>Reis.</i>	<i>Reis.</i>
Lisbon imported to the value of	2,448,672,240	
Setuval, ditto - -	109,448,420	
Figueira, ditto - -	42,858,300	
Algarve, ditto - -	1,341,610	
Oporto, ditto - -	779,659,280	
Total value of imports -	<hr/>	3,381,979,850

<i>Exports.</i>	<i>Reis.</i>	
Lisbon exported to the value of	551,329,490	
Setuval, ditto - -	26,726,420	
Figueira, ditto - -	2,482,400	
Algarve, ditto - -	23,315,530	
Oporto, ditto - -	959,957,520	
Vianna, ditto - -	508,400	
Total value of exports -	<hr/>	1,564,319,760

Balance in favour of England - 1,817,660,090

Which makes £. 511,216 : 18 : 0 sterling.

Trade of Portugal with Ireland in the year 1784.

	<i>Reis.</i>
Value of goods imported from Ireland	366,734,435
Value of goods exported to Ireland	140,439,720
	<hr/>
Balance in favour of Ireland	226,294,715
or £. 63,645 : 5 : 9 sterling.	

This

This statement differs very much from that of the British Factory at Lisbon, which was laid before the House of Commons in the year 1787; yet the very high authority whence I have been favoured with it, authorises me to say that it is a correct copy from the Portuguese registers.

The accounts of the British factory state, that the goods imported from Great Britain and Ireland in the year 1785, amounted only to 960,000 *l.* sterling, and the exports to these nations, of the produce of Portugal and its colonies, in the same year, to 728,000 *l.*; hence the balance against Portugal appears but 232,000 *l.*; whereas, according to the above, the balance in favour of Great Britain, independent of Ireland, is 511,216 *l.* 18 *s.*

The difference may be partly accounted for thus: The Portuguese have included in their statement, a certain sum for merchandize supposed to have been imported through illicit channels. The British Factory, on the contrary, have noticed only the apparent imports which certainly fall short of the real ones, though probably not to the amount the Portuguese calculate upon.

In the present reign, a guard-boat has been appointed to reconnoitre every British packet, to prevent contraband traffic. Twenty-nine of these packets arrived at Lisbon in the year 1790. The total number of ships that arrived here from Great Britain and Ireland in the same year, amounted to 319;—Portuguese ships 252;—from all other parts of Europe 321;—from America 75.

According

According to the most authentic accounts, the Falmouth packets brought from Portugal to England, in the space of thirteen years, (from 1759 to 1772,) 9,319,938*l.* sterling in bullion and specie, without including diamonds and other precious stones, or the sums of money remitted by merchant-ships from the ports of Lisbon, Setuval, and Oporto, or the riches sent collaterally to England through the medium of Holland, and the ports of the Mediterranean. In September 1783, there arrived at Falmouth three packets with 100,000*l.* sterling in specie.

The Portuguese further allege, that vast treasures are brought from Brazil, by English ships which hover about the coasts to receive diamonds, gold, silver, and spicery, secretly from the inhabitants.

In the year 1789, there arrived in the river Tagus sixty British ships laden with Newfoundland fish, to the amount of 59,073 hundred weight.

From June 1782 to December 1784, the English landed at the city of Oporto 150,000 hundred weight of fish, independent of what they brought to *Lisbon, Figueira, Aveira, Setuval, Lagos, Faro*, the island of *Madeira*, and the *Azores*; the fish received by these different ports, one year with another, from British ships, is valued at 720,000,000 *reis*, or 202,500*l.* sterling, calculating it at the wholesale market price, that is 4000 *reis*, or 22*s.* 6*d.* per quintal*.

* Formerly it appears that the Portuguese fished on the coasts of Great Britain, agreeably to a treaty of commerce established between them and Edward III. of England

in the year 1353, and which treaty, it was agreed upon, should continue in force for fifty years.

—*Sachent touz que, comme les bones gentz, marchantz,*

The

The other principal merchandizes imported from England are, woollens and hardware; of the former Portugal received, in the year 1784, to the value of 2,058,766,150 *reis*.

The exports of Portugal are various, wine, oil, spirits, salt, sugar, cotton, cork, drugs, tobacco, sweetmeats, and fruits, such as oranges, lemons, figs, almonds, nuts, for which, and all other commodities of the growth of the kingdom and of its colonies, England is certainly by far the best foreign market. The exportation of these articles, particularly the staple, wine, has so increased of late years, whilst, on the contrary, the consumption of the staple of England has decreased in Portugal, that it is a question, whether the trade between both nations at present be not at *par*.

Among the articles exported from Portugal to Brazil are the following; woollens, linens, stuffs, gold and silver lace, dried fish of the produce of the kingdom, hams, sausages, haggesses, pilchards, cheese, butter, biscuits, cakes, wine, oil, vinegar, vermicelli, macaroni, bay leaves, walnuts, peeled chefnuts, dried plumbs, olives, onions, garlick, rosemary, and glassware of every kind manufactured at *Marinha*.

The imports from Brazil to Portugal are very numerous; gold, silver, pearls, and precious stones of various kinds: Rice, wheat,

marchauntz, mariners, et les comarales de la marine, des citees et villes de Ulixbon et de Port du Portugale, du roialme et de seigneurie de Roi de Portugale et de Algarbe, eient envoyé Alphonse Martyn, dit Albo, leur message, et procurateur devers le tre-excellent Prince Monsieur Edouard, par la Grace de Dieu Roi d'Angleterre et de Fraunce, de trater des amistes et fetmes alliances entre le dit Roi d'Angleterre et de Fraunce, par lui, et par les subgitz et les gentz.—Item, que peesoners de la marine, et citees avant dices, puissent venir et pecher francement et sauvement en les portz d'Angleterre et de Bretagne, et en touz les autres lieux et portz, ou ils vourront, paiaintz les droits et les custumes a les seigneurz du pays.—Don en Loundres 20 Oâob. l'an de Grace 1353.

Corps Diplomat. T. i. part ii. pag. 286.

maize,—flour, starch, and hair-powder made of *Mandioca*^a; sugar, molasses, sweetmeats, honey, wax, silk, cocoa, coffee, nuts, spirits, whale-bone, train oil,—woods of various kinds for construction, furniture, and ornament.—*Coquilbo*^b, glew, gum,—fans made of feathers and of leaves; salt-petre, sponges;—the teeth of elephants and sea-horses; parrots and other birds; ostrich feathers, apes, *Sagui*^c; the hides of oxen, and the skins of different quadrupeds, as hares, rabbits, otters, tygers, ounces, gennets, goats, chamois, &c. &c.

There are also a great variety of dying and medicinal plants imported from the colonies, besides balsams and aromatics, among which are the following:

Dying Plants.

Orchel weed^d. Indigo^e. *Arariba*^f. *Curcuma*^g, or Ginger. *Curugiuru*^h. *Urucú*ⁱ. Brazil wood^k, *Brafilete*, and a new species of Brazil wood lately discovered, which is not inferior to the old. *Gabaon*^l, and the barks of many trees in Brazil and in the island of Saint Thomas, yield excellent dyes, and also the *Pastel*^m, which is brought from the island of Madeira.

^a *Mandioca*.—"A root in the province of Brazil, like a carrot or parsnip, but bigger.

^b The Indians dry and grind them, and of that meal make their common bread, as do most of the Portuguese." *Vieyra's Dict.*

^c *Coquilbo*.—"A little cocoa nut that comes from the Brazils; they generally make snuff-boxes and beads of it." *Ibid.*

^d *Sagui*.—"A sort of small ape in Brazil no bigger than a squirrel, with reddish hair, but in most respects shaped like a lion; very beautiful and bold." *Ibid.*

^e *Lichen rocella*.

^f *Indigofera fativa*. This plant, and also the orchel weed and pastel, require a preparation before the colour is extracted.

^g From Pernambuco.

^h *Curcuma rotunda, longa*.

ⁱ Yields a tint like the cochineal.

^j *Bixa orellana*.

^k *Casalpina Brasiliensis*.

^l Found on the coast of *Gabaon* in Africa.

^m *Iatis fativa*.

Medicinal

Medicinal Plants.

Senna^a. Contrayerva^b. Ipecacuanha^c. Cascarilha^d. Salfaparrilha^e. Jalap^f. *Arapabaca*, or *Spigelia*^g. Tamarinds^h. *Canna Fiftula*ⁱ. *Parreira*^k. *Quajaco*^l. Saffafras^m. Storaxⁿ. Ginger^o, and the three new kinds of *Quina Quina* (Jesuits bark) of *Pernambuco*, one of which is of a gray colour, and impregnated with gum, refin, and essential oil, and in effect is preferable to the best Peruvian bark.

Balsams.

The balsams of *St. Thomas*^p, of *Copaiba*^q, *Cabureiba*^r, the *Cabureuta*^s, and *Omijri*^t.

Aromaticks.

Cinnamon^u. Pepper^v. Cloves of *Maranbaon*^x. *Puchary*^y, great and small. *Vanilha*^z.

^a *Cassia*, of the Cape Verde island.

^b *Dorstenia contrajerva*.

^c *Euphorbia ipecacuana*, et *viola ipecacuana*.

^d *Croton cascarilha*.

^e *Smilax sarsaparilla*.

^f *Convolvulus jalapa*.

^g *Spigelia antihelmia*.

^h *Tamarindus Indica*.

ⁱ *Cassia javanica*.

^k *Cissampelos Pereira*.

^l *Quajacum sanctum*.

^m *Laurus sassafras*.

ⁿ *Liquidambar styracifolix*.

^o *Anomum ginger*. The Dutch, one year with another, sell more than ten thousand pounds of ginger prepared with

sugar, besides the dry. Europe draws from the Antilles more than three hundred thousand pounds of it.

^p A species of turpentine.

^q *Copaifera officinalis*.

^r *V. Pison*.

^s *Pison*.

^t *Himenea courbaril*.

^u *Laurus cinnamomi* of the island of St. Thomas.

^v *Piper racemosum*,—island of St. Thomas.

^x *Winterania canella*.

^y A tree unknown till of late, the smaller it is the more aromatick. In *Para* it is called the precious fruit-tree.

^z *Epidendron vanilla*.

C H A P. XIII.

Premiums.

AMONG the chief premiums offered and adjudged by the Royal Academy of Lisbon, since the year 1783, are the following:

I. A physical and œconomical description of some district or considerable territory in Portugal, or in some of its transmarine dominions, to be accompanied with observations useful to the agriculture and industry of the nation.—*A gold medal, value fifty Mil reis.*

N. B. The subject to be continued annually. The Royal Academy wishes that the memoirs to be given of the territory do contain, besides the history of its animal, vegetable, and mineral productions, treated according to the Linnæan system, the state of its population, agriculture, mechanic arts, and industry, its commerce with the neighbouring countries, and with foreigners; the defects that might appear in each of these branches, and the means of rectifying the same; with the improvements of which the commerce and productions of the country is susceptible, and the industry of its inhabitants in general.

II. What is the best method of cultivating, improving, and preserving wines, and the most efficacious manner of promoting

moting the reputation and revenue of this important branch of the commerce of Portugal?—100 *Mil reis*.

N.B. It is the wish of the Academy, that the authors of any memoirs on this subject do point out the different species of vine stocks, with their respective names, characterised by the kindred fruit, in the manner practised by the *Abbe Rozier, Dubamel*, and other agricultural naturalists.—The properties and value of each stock—The respective quality and quantity of the wine they yield—The soil most suitable to them—The insects that are pernicious to them, the cautions to be taken against them, or the best manner of destroying them—The cause of any defect to which the wine might be subject, and the manner of rectifying the same, proved by experiments—The divers methods of making wine, both at home and abroad—How to preserve, purify, and prepare it for commerce—How to discover if it be adulterated.—Finally, how to imitate the best and most esteemed wines of foreigners.

III. The advantages and disadvantages attending the burning of land, according to the manner practised at present in various parts of the kingdom—What method would be productive of most advantage, and how to obviate the defects and disadvantages of the common manner of burning land?—50 *Mil reis*.

IV. What is the best manner of supplying the place of animal dung for manure, in places where it cannot be conveniently obtained?—96 *Mil reis*.

An unknown patriot has remitted to the Academy, a sum of money to be given for the two following subjects:

V. A premium of 50 *Mil reis*, or a medal of the same value, to the author of the best paper on the most effectual manner of rendering the lands of the kingdom useful that are covered with sand, circumstances not admitting of their being mixed with the clayey soil of other lands; pointing out at the same time the species of culture best adapted to the same.

VI. Four premiums of 24 *Mil reis* each, and a silver medal to each of four farmers of the towns of *Robatejo*, *Almada*, *Sezimbra*, and *Azeitaon*, who shall plant the greatest quantity of chestnut trees in sandy or marshy soils.

VII. An examination of the implements of husbandry used in Portugal, compared with those of other nations, shewing how their improvements might be adopted among us, taking into consideration our circumstances and the nature of the soil.
—50 *Mil reis*.

VIII. A comparison of the cars and other vehicles of burthen used in Portugal with those of other nations, shewing the manner of improving our own from whatever is found excellent in the vehicles of others, having regard at the same time to our circumstances.

IX. A premium of 50 *Mil reis* for the best design of a ship which shall be proved to sail with the greatest possible velocity, to be accompanied with such plans, sections, and views of the different principal component parts, as shall be found necessary to illustrate the construction of the same.

X. How

X. How to determine, by the most expeditious and certain manner, what distance and rhomb a ship sails in a given time.—100 *Mil reis*.

XI. What are the physical defects in the preparation of salting our fish, whereby its preservative and nutritive qualities are injured; and by what means might this important branch of our sustenance and commerce be perfected?—50 *Mil reis*.

XII. For the easiest and least expensive manner of extracting from common salt the alkaline base, in such a manner that it be free from acid, and rendered fit for our manufactories and commerce.—50 *Mil reis*.

XIII. For the greatest quantity of nitre produced by artificial means.—100 *Mil reis*.

It is observed, that the fabrication of gun-powder is brought to such perfection in Portugal, that it might become one of its most lucrative branches of commerce, were the culture of saltpetre properly attended to.

XVI. For planting in waste lands the greatest quantity of trees, for the use of fire-wood, and for making charcoal.—50 *Mil reis*.

XV. A gold medal, value 30 *Mil reis*, for recovering any person apparently drowned.

XVI. For the manner of finding the equations of the planets of observation, adapted chiefly to the determining of the different phases of the moon.—A premium of 100 *Mil reis*.

XVII.

XVII. For the best Portuguese translation of the Georgics of Virgil, either in prose or verse, illustrated and augmented not only with such explanations, philological and poetical, as shall appear sufficient, but also with information and notices which no other author has hitherto given on the subject; and withal, that they be such as appertain, or might be applied to the Portuguese nation; taking care that the application so made be such as might be realized, or is already practised.—50 *Mil reis*.

XVIII. For an essay on, and *topographico-medica* description of Lisbon, pointing out the circumstances of its climate and situation;—the analysis and variations of its atmosphere,—the aliments of its inhabitants, and their mode of living in general; with a collection of such well-authenticated facts, as may lead to a knowledge of the nature of the diseases, endemical and epidemical, of this city.—50 *Mil reis*.

XIX. For an account of the actual medical temperament of Lisbon, (which is observed to be different at present from what it had been a century ago,) explaining the degree of strength of the nerves, the crisis at which acute diseases generally begin, and the particularities of the real and characteristic symptoms upon which the practice depends; to be accompanied with sound observations on the causes of diseases, and the manner of curing them.—50 *Mil reis*.

XX. A premium of 50 *Mil reis* is offered for the best essay on nervous and hysteric complaints—Shewing the best manner of curing them—How far these diseases are influenced by the common education, customs, diet, and clothing of children; and

and by what changes they might be rendered more robust, healthy, and strong; to be proved by experiments.

XXI. As it is observed that of late years consumptions are more prevalent amongst us than formerly, what are the causes of the fatal deterioration?—The species of this disease most common in Portugal, particularly in Lisbon—The preventives and most approved method of curing it—The diet, clothing, and dwelling proper for the patients?—50 *Mil reis*.

XXII. An examination of the causes of the morpew so common in *Rio de Janeiro*, and which begins to prevail in *Bahia*—The most effectual method of eradicating it, and guarding against its influence, seeing that it is not endemical—If a total change of food, air, or medicine, can effect a complete cure—The manner of treating it in other parts, with the writer's own essays on the cure of it.

XXIII. An account of the actual state of Portuguese literature, with regard to what appertains to good taste in speaking and writing, with a systematic enumeration of barbarisms and defects which ought to be corrected, pointing out the origin of such faults, to be elucidated not only by conclusive arguments, but also by examples.—A gold medal, value 50 *Mil reis*.

XXIV. To form a mode of locution applicable to the nature of the Portuguese language, illustrating each precept by examples from the ancient and modern writers of perfect taste, and adding thereto the theory of the opposite vicious mode; to be illustrated in like manner by examples of the corrupt taste of the moderns.—A gold medal, value 50 *Mil reis*.

For the following subject, proposed without limitation of time, a premium of 100 *Mil reis* is offered :

XXV. A Philosophical Grammar of the Portuguese Language.

N. B. The Royal Academy wishes to have a Philosophical Grammar of the Portuguese Language, containing clear and fixed principles, and consequently adapted for the instruction of youth in the elements of letters.—That, in the first place, it do treat of what is common to the grammar of all languages, and of the origin and progress of the human understanding; that is, how ideas are acquired, combined, analyzed, and rendered universal—How we form our judgment and ratiocinate; all this relatively to the signs by which is expressed each of these acts of the understanding—Of general terms, and how they are formed—The signification and use of particles, &c.—That withal it be a grammar of universal application to the Portuguese language, giving the clearest possible idea of the analogy of its parts with regard to etymology and syntax, with an explanation of their principal anomalies. The better to accomplish the above, we recommend to those who purpose to undertake a work of such general utility, to read Locke's essay on the human understanding. The works of Condillac. Hartley's physical explanation of the senses. The universal grammar of M. Beauzée, and also that of M. Buffier. The works of M. du Marfais. Diderot's letter concerning the deaf and dumb. The articles in the Encyclopædia upon grammar, and other similar works respecting the philosophy of languages.

XXVI.

XXVI. A circumstantial history of the typographical art in Portugal since its introduction into the kingdom to the present time.—50 *Mil reis*.

N. B. It is necessary that there be pointed out by whom it had been introduced—The most famous printers that we have had—If their copies be distinguished by any name or device—In what cities have they principally resided—What particular copies are there in convents, towns, &c. not generally known—Have there been celebrated correctors amongst us—Finally, what part of our colonies contain any remarkable copies?

XXVII. A premium of a gold medal, value 50 *Mil reis*, for the best eulogy on some eminent Portuguese character whose actions deserve to be celebrated and recorded.

A similar premium is offered for each of the two following subjects, which are to be continued annually:

XXVIII. A Portuguese tragedy—A comedy, in prose or in verse, with Portuguese characters.

XXIX. Four silver medals will be given by the Academy for the four best poetical compositions which are neither epic, nor dramatic.

XXX. A gold medal, value 50 *Mil reis*, for the best account of the Portuguese military in Europe, relative to the number of soldiers, the different kinds of troops, the arms used by each troop, the manner of distributing and commanding them, and the manner they served in war since the commencement of the monarchy till the invasion of Philip II.

XXXI. In what epocha was the Justinian code of laws brought into Portugal—The manner of its introduction, and the degree of authority it had obtained in the kingdom?—
50 Mil reis.

The general conditions for all premiums proposed are as follow: That the memoirs sent be written in the Portuguese language; that the authors be natives of Portugal; that such memoirs as obtain premiums be not published nor printed without the express order or permission of the Royal Academy.

C H A P. XIV.

On the Preference that Agriculture claims over Manufactures in Portugal, by DOMINICK VANDELLI, LL.D. &c. &c.

Translation.

I.

As it is evident that all branches of civil œconomy, in order to be useful to the state, ought to be directed by principles deduced from sound political arithmetic, therefore no system should be adopted without being previously examined and compared with the actual state of the nation.

II.

II.

In the last reign, when the system of Colbert was followed, the manufactures of the kingdom produced a considerable revenue; agriculture, however, was not lost sight of in the mean time.

III.

As the kingdom is now in a state that calls for a total reformation, ought not a wise king and an able minister give a renovating impulse to all departments of public administration, and leave the passing age and future generations to avail themselves of such a glorious momentum that one day would crown the happiness of the nation.*

IV.

No system, no measure, however, can with safety be adopted, without a previous examination of the actual state of the nation (§ I.); therefore, besides the investigations that are now on foot respecting agriculture † and manufactures, inquiry should also be made into the actual state of population, industry, natural productions, commerce, public revenue, and national expenditures.

V.

In some other memoir I purpose to treat of the present state of our commerce. In this I shall examine whether of

* This appears a bold assertion to issue from a Portuguese press; the words of the judicious author are as follow:

Mas no estado, no qual se achava o reino, necessitado de huma total reforma; não podia hum sabio rei, e hum habil ministro, senão dar geraes movi-

mentos a todos os ramos da publica administração, ficando aos vindouros o aperfeiçoar, e aproveitar esses grandes impulsos, que bão hum dia fazer a felicidade da nação.

† Answers of the farmers to the queries proposed to them, published in 1787.

the two claim a preference in Portugal, manufactures or agriculture.

VI.

To think that agriculture and industry can be rendered independent of one another is impossible. To prefer the latter to the former is the worst policy imaginable.

VII.

Colbert justly thought, that the most effectual means of promoting industry was by making agriculture flourish.

VIII.

Many are of opinion, that the multiplying of manufactures increase agriculture and population, as they prevent the drain of cash; alleging that the more money is in circulation, the greater value will be set upon the labours of the plough.

IX.

That, wherever manufactories are found, agriculture and population are sure to prosper.

X.

That manufactories occupy many people, who otherwise would pass their time in indolence.

XI.

That the policy of Holland should be imitated, which is indebted for her riches not to agriculture, but chiefly to industry and commerce.

XII.

XII.

But in the days of Sully the contrary was experienced, of which Colbert * was fully evinced (§ vii.); for unless agriculture prosper, the existence of manufactories must be precarious.

XIII.

It is certain that manufactories promote agriculture on account of their great consumption (§ viii.); but this is when the artisans have wherewithal to subsist on †, and that the peasantry are sufficiently numerous. But, on the contrary, if you diminish the peasantry in order to increase the artisans, you will have neither manufactures nor agriculture, but promiscuously.

XIV.

The population of Portugal is computed at two millions, for whose sustenance 616,000 cultivators are necessary; but as there is wanting of this number more than a third part, (exclusive of the Gallicians who come to *Alto-Douro* and *Alentejo*,) the kingdom requires, one year with another, from 77 to 80 thousand *moios* of wheat, maize, &c. besides barley. And the kingdom of Algarve, whose population is 93,472 souls, wants 19,245 *moios*, for it has not more than 6,521 yeomen, and 5,575 labourers, as may be seen in the exact map of that kingdom, made by *Count de Val de Reis*, Captain General and Governor thereof.

* M. Boulainvilliers. *Les intérêts de la France mal-entendu*, 3 tom. 1755.

† Mr. Boesnier de l'Orme De l'Esprit du Gouvernement économique, 1775. chap. iii. pag. 40.—

Point d'arts, point de manufactures, sans de subsistances pour nourrir les artistes, et les ouvriers.

Avant d'avoir des doreurs, il faut du pain pour nourrir les doreurs.

XV.

The peasantry are continually diminishing.

1st, On account of their resorting to cities, especially to the capital. In the reign of John II. a complaint was preferred to the *Cortes* against a similar practice.

2dly, On account of the numbers that emigrate every year through extreme poverty, and the prospect of getting land gratuitously to cultivate in foreign countries, and other encouragements that are withheld from them in their own.

3dly, From the number of failors that leave Algarve and enter into the service of foreign powers.

4thly, From the manufactories employing an exorbitant number of cultivators. The silk trade alone is computed to occupy 27,000 people, and a proportionate number are employed in more than 200 other different manufactories, not to mention the vast number of vagrants and other idle people.

XVI.

England is not in want of tillers, nor manufacturers; on the contrary they superabound: therefore manufactories are necessary, not only for the consumption of its own productions, but also those which it imports from foreign countries. In Portugal, circumstances are very different; whilst it remains deficient of its complement of husbandmen (§ xiv.), it should tolerate only a few manufactories, and these of the first necessity.

XVII.

XVII.

It is of little use to cite instances of increasing population and agriculture in the neighbourhood of some manufactories of this kingdom, as that for glass at *Marinha*, and for oil at *Xitas*. For if, in the vicinity of these places, by reason of the great circulation of money, there be a numerous population, a great consumption of the necessaries of life, and consequently a great improvement in agriculture, the circumjacent villages, at the same time, are deprived of both population and agriculture.

XVIII.

In order to employ idle persons, a preference should be given to agriculture; but without proper measures be taken to initiate them, and divest them of their depraved habits by a suitable education, they will be found useless as well to agriculture as to arts and manufactures.

XIX.

The example of Holland (§ xi.) cannot be held out for Portugal, because the situation of the former does not admit of cultivation in a higher degree than it actually possesses; and hence the people are constrained to turn to other species of industry, of which the chief is external commerce.

XX.

In order to derive advantage from manufactures, they must be sold on moderate terms; but how can that be, unless the artisan and factor be supplied with the necessaries of life, and the raw materials to work with, at a reduced price?

XXI.

XXI.

So long as the nation, from the actual state of its agriculture (§ xiii. and xiv.), one year with another, stands in need of wheat, maize, and rye from abroad, to the amount of five millions and a half of crusades and upwards, only the most necessary manufactures should be attended to.

XXII.

Agriculture should be preferred to manufactories, for we have already experienced to what an excessive price barley rose on account of the vessels laden with this grain being detained for a few days by frost. But what would be the consequence should a general scarcity prevail in those countries whence the wheat is brought; or if, through some other external cause not less fatal, we should be deprived of succour from abroad? Could manufactories supply the deficiency? What could relieve the miseries to which the people must necessarily be exposed for want of wheat, maize, rye, should the transports be lost or detained by contrary winds?

XXIII.

The best political economists hold these as immutable principles:

1st, That the fate of the state, and that of humanity, the savages excepted, who live by hunting and fishing, is in the hands of the cultivators of the soil.

2dly, That the productions of the soil are the only true riches; and that the only genuine principle of these riches is cultivation.

3dly,

3dly, *That consumption is the only agent that renders the productions of the earth valuable, that animates, that extends, that multiplies.*

4thly, *That the more value is set upon the fruits of the earth, the better will the land be tilled, and consequently the more abundant will the harvest be.*

XXIV.

The last economical axiom will apply to a country where the price of the necessaries of life might be raised without a possibility of getting them cheaper from abroad by bartering with its colonies. But it is not so with Portugal, whose colonies, by contributing to supply it, lower the price of its own agricultural productions, and prevent their rising to a sufficient value to render the soil better cultivated and more abundant (§ viii.).

XXV.

What utility does the nation derive from so many manufactures? Let us suppose that their productions amount annually to the value of a million of *crusades*, which sum was heretofore expended on similar manufactures imported by foreigners. Now, in order to shew that the nation gains by the change, it will be necessary to prove, that the importation of corn, maize, and rye has not increased in proportion at the same time as it actually has.

XXVI.

The manufactures have no other markets but those of the kingdom and its colonies; it is true, that even so, the value of industry is saved to the nation that otherwise would have been expended

expended on the manufactures of foreigners. But the sums (§ xxv.) thus saved, are not equivalent to what the kingdom loses by the increase that has taken place in the importation of corn (§ xiv.), in consequence of diminishing the peasantry to increase the artificers (§ xiii.).

XXVII.

In order to have manufactories, let us imitate the English, and follow their precepts. These people, in the year 1689, by holding out premiums for the exportation of grain, promoted agriculture; afterwards they augmented their commerce and increased manufactures; and seeing that this did not injure agriculture, they invented machines to ease labour and multiply manufactures for external commerce. Within these few years they have established 143 machines for spinning cotton, by means of which, in little more than five years have been spun two hundred millions of pounds of cotton. In Portugal it would be expedient to introduce such machines immediately, to save labour and to employ women on those branches that at present occupy men.

XXVIII.

The manufactories that merit greatest attention are those that consume the productions of the nation; but even these should be proportionate to the superfluity of the peasants.

XXIX.

The manufactories that do not injure agriculture are those dispersed about the country, at which husbandmen and their wives employ their spare hours from the labours of the field,
in

in making common woollen and linen cloths. These little manufactories are the more valuable, as being established by the peasants at their own expence, their produce is certain gain. In proportion as you improve them, you will advance agriculture.

XXX.

The state of manufactories must always be in proportion to that of agriculture. All depends upon the abundance and cheapness of the raw materials, and of the necessaries of life (§ xx.).

XXXI.

The first thing to be done then, in order to make the manufactories of the kingdom flourish, is to promote agriculture. For this purpose the existing laws are not sufficient; incitement is wanting; rewards and honours should be held out to stimulate the farmers.

XXXII.

Wool is certainly one of those articles that requires the greatest care and attention, not only as being the chief material of the most interesting manufactories, but also, as being one of the principal objects upon which agriculture depends, by reason of the great benefits received by the land and by the farmers from sheep. Indeed, the value of land depends upon the price of wool. It is indispensably necessary for the kingdom, in order to promote its agriculture, not to lower the price of this necessary material.

XXXIII.

It is a mistaken notion, dangerous in its consequences, to think of lowering the high price of your manufactures by laying a total prohibition on the exportation of wool; but this is not a place to explain myself on this point.

XXXIV.

In order that the inhabitants of cities and towns should have flesh-meat at a low price, the exportation of cattle is prohibited by *Ord, L. v. T. 115*. Thus the interest of the farmer, and the advancement of agriculture, the true sources of wealth, are sacrificed to the inhabitants of cities and towns; the very *germen* of reproduction is thereby destroyed, and the reward of the farmer's toil diminished by prohibitory laws.

XXXV.

The manufactories whose productions are confined to the kingdom and its colonies (§ xxvi.) by reason of their high price ought to be limited, as it is not politic to multiply them, except in the parts that are cultivated so as to maintain the inhabitants (§ xvi.), and that have provisions to export.

XXXVI.

The silk and other manufactories wherein the raw materials of foreigners are consumed, should be suffered to use only the national materials, otherwise they will ruin the kingdom.

XXXVII.

XXXVII.

The national manufactories, in order to be useful and established upon a permanent basis, should keep pace with those of foreigners that pay 27 *per cent.* with the addition of six for freight and commission. Now if 33 *per cent.* besides profits on their manufactures, be not sufficient to support our own, and put them on a footing with those of strangers, independent of monopoly, it must naturally follow that either our manufacturers wish to gain much by little labour, or that the manufactories are ill established and ill directed, or that they cannot subsist to advantage on account of the state of agriculture.

XXXVIII.

It amounts to the same thing, whether you increase the duty or totally prohibit the manufactures of strangers, in order to increase the consumption of your own; both are monopolies, serviceable to the factor, but injurious to the people at large, by obliging them to buy bad manufactures at a dear rate; besides it is opening a new door for smuggling. It is certain that the factors, from the present state of agriculture, gain very little, if they be not losers; but they will gain a great deal, and extend their factories, by making bad articles and selling them dear, should the manufactures of strangers be prohibited or restricted.

XXXIX.

What gave origin in Portugal to so many manufactories of luxury, whilst those of the most urgent necessity have been neglected?

XL.

Manufactories ministering to luxury are prejudicial to the revenue of the state, by the high duties which are or might be drawn from the luxurious productions of strangers without injuring the people. But as this revenue is unproductive, the crown is under the necessity of laying a tax, in lieu of it, upon some of the necessaries of life.

XLI.

The number of manufactories ought to be relatively to the situation of the country, the actual state of its agriculture, its natural productions (§ iv.), and the different branches of commerce which might be made of such productions by industry.

XLII.

In fine, it is obvious from the above, that agriculture ought to be preferred in Portugal to manufactures; and, that the latter should not be multiplied until the kingdom produces the necessary sustenance for its inhabitants at a cheap rate, otherwise both your agriculture and manufactures will be ruined.

Vide Memorias Economicas, tom. i. p. 244 & seq.

C H A P. XV.

Observations on some of the natural Productions of the Portuguese Colonies not generally known, or, not converted to Use.—By DOMINICK VANDELLI, LL.D.

Translation.

OF all the productions of nature, gold mines are those that are held in highest estimation, and universally attended to more than agriculture.

The wisest politicians, however, are convinced of the folly of this predilection; indeed it is evinced most clearly by the wealth of nations, for those who possess the most valuable mines, and make them the chief sources of their riches, are not so opulent as the states that attend to agriculture, arts, and commerce. In proof of this, you will find, on comparison, that the respective riches of Spain and Portugal are inferior to those of Holland, France, and England, as Emanuel de Faria has shewn.

Of all other mines, those of gold are the most uncertain, unequal, and unprofitable. The thin veins that appear in them are of *quartzo*, in the crevices of which the gold is inclosed, or else spread over it in particles*. That which is commonly

* The matrix of the gold of Brazil is *quartzum solidum attactu pingue facie nitente, vinosum, celulosum, schisto argillaceo viridescenti* cum oebra ferri et pyrite martiali, et arsenicali aurifero. And sometimes *quartzum cotaceum*, or iron mineral. *Smiris grisea lamellosa*, or *pyrites*.

commonly found among sand or gravel, according to the observation of *Frezier*, in his account of the South Sea, and to which Captain *Bretagh* refers in the collection of *Harris*, is small in quantity, for, from 5000 pounds weight of the gold ore, or sand, or earth, are extracted only five or six ounces of gold; and there are other mines still less profitable, which scarcely defray the expence of working.

It sometimes happens, indeed, that more than a pound weight of gold is extracted from a small portion of the ore or dust, but instances of this kind are very rare of late years; and for one miner that makes a fortune, one hundred lose by the speculation*.

But as it is not my intention, at present, to enlarge upon this subject, I shall only observe, that the gold mines do not deserve to be considered as the principal objects of attention in Brazil, and that they stand much in need of proper regulation. Other natural productions, of much more importance to the wealth of the nation, claim our attention in the colonies, and these are to be obtained by means of agriculture, or the spontaneous bounty of nature.

With regard to agriculture, independent of the islands, Brazil alone is adequate to supply wheat, maize, pulse, instead of those we are under the necessity of buying every

pyrites. Or is found in dust, or crystallized *tessera octaedra ut alumen, aut dodecaedra*. The large piece of native gold which is in the possession of her Majesty weighs upwards of 50 *marcos*. (N. B. A *marco* is eight ounces. *Vide Vieira's Dict.*)

* The method of extracting the gold in

Brazil is well known, for it is very ancient; it is done by means of a lotion. It sometimes happens, however, that part of the gold adheres so closely to the sand, that neither lotion nor common amalgamation can separate them; this gold is not observed by the miners.

year from foreigners. The cultivation of these different productions has already commenced in *Rio Grande*.

Rice ^a, which is natural to Brazil, by the patriotic zeal of his Excellency *Martinho de Melho*, secretary of state, is at present grown in abundance in that country; whereas heretofore we were under the necessity of buying it of Carolina. In the year 1740 this state exported to the amount of 80,000 *l.* sterling of rice to Europe, the greatest part of which sum was paid by Portugal.

To the above minister the nation is indebted for the indigo ^b at present fabricated in the colonies, which serves, not only for our domestic uses, but also for foreign commerce.

In order to promote agriculture in Brazil and in the other colonies as well as in the kingdom, the wisest laws must prove inadequate, unless they be aided by bounties. Of this England furnished an example. When the people of this nation complained, that from the year 1620 the French supplied them with great quantities of grain, an act of parliament was passed in the year 1689, holding out premiums for the exportation of corn and legumes in English vessels; in consequence of which, from the year 1705, till 1755, they sold to France to the amount of two hundred millions of French livres of grain.

If all the governors of Brazil would follow the example of his Excellency Luiz Pento de Souza, in taming and civilizing

^a *Oryza mutica*. The rice of Brazil is different from the *oryza sativa*, as not having *aristas*.

^b *Indigo fera sativa*.

the Indians, and habituating them to agriculture and industry, a great part of Brazil would be cultivated in a few years; and its population would increase so, that the transporting of slaves thither would be found unnecessary.

Seeing that many of the natural productions of the colonies are but little known, or converted to no use whatever, I shall point out such of them as have hitherto come within my observation.

Animal Kingdom.

Among the quadrupeds, we are accustomed to make use of the skins of *Ounces*^a, *Tigres*^b, *Otters*^c, *Aguti*^d, and *Pacas*^e. But we make very little use of the sleeker skins of the *Tapeti*^f; and of the *Caviacobaya*^g of Brazil. Besides, it would be necessary to avail ourselves more of the flesh of the hogs of *Tajacú*^h and *Capybara*ⁱ in Brazil.

The *Ewes* of Guinea^k might be multiplied more in Angola, and transported to Brazil and Portugal. This would be following the example of Pedro IV. King of Castile, and of Cardinal Ximenes, and of Edward IV. of England.

The *Zebras*^l of Angola might perhaps be domesticated in Portugal; the experiment has been already begun, for the use of carriages, and for external commerce.

^a *Felis cauda elongata, corpore nigro.*

^b *Felis Onça.*

^c *Mustella lutris.*

^d *Mus aguti.*

^e *Mus paca.*

^f *Lepus Brasiliensis.*

^g *Mus porcellus.*

^h *Sus Tajacu.*

ⁱ *Sus hydrocheris.*

^k *Ovis Guineensis.*

^l *Equus zebra.*

The

The Cat of *Algalia*^a in Brazil affords a species of musk which is called *Zibete*.

The numerous herds of cows that are found in Brazil might afford cheese and butter for the use of the kingdom, and for external commerce; and thereby we might save the large sums of money which are drained every year from Portugal for these articles.

It is true that in some parts of Brazil the inhabitants make cheese, but it is more for curiosity than use. The heat, they say, prevents them from making butter; this, however, might be easily remedied at all times, by imitating the practice of the Dutch in the East Indies.

Of the vast numbers of oxen that are killed in Brazil, mostly for the sake of the hides, some use might be made of the membrane; if dried and opened, it might be useful to curriers. The tendons or ligaments of the neck would make back-bands for cars, much better than those of iron or wood.

There are many valuable birds in the colonies, whose beautiful feathers might be converted to useful purposes; those of the ostrich^b in particular would make furs for hats, and ornaments of different sorts.

The *Whale*^c and *Cazelote*^d fisheries, which are confined to the bar of the island of St. Catherine, and the bay of All Saints, might be extended to all the coast, and to the high seas of

^a *Viverra zibetiba*.

^b *Struthio rhea*.

^c *Balena physalus*.

^d *Physeter catodon*.

Brazil and Cape Verde. Of the whales of these seas other nations avail themselves.

This species of fishery is very profitable. The Dutch gained by it, in the year 1697, more than two millions of florins. Although in other years the gain falls short of this sum, yet, on the whole, it yields a very large revenue.

Of the Hippopotamus, or sea-horse of Angola, some use might be made.

From the Mermaid* of Angola, and of many other parts of Brazil, might be extracted great quantities of oil, the smell and smoke of which oil might be diminished by repeated washings.

Were the fisheries continued on the coasts of the Azores and Madeira, that were begun with great success, and were a regular fishery established at Cape Verde, similar to those of other nations, we should not only supply the place of the numerous cargoes of dry fish which foreigners bring to our ports, but also have large quantities for exportation; whilst, at the same time, the strength of our navy would be augmented.

Holland, in this respect, furnishes an example worthy imitation. The celebrated John Wit, (in his political memoirs of this republic, printed in the year 1662,) computes the

* *Trichechus manatus*.

population

population of the same at 2,400,000 souls; 750,000 of whom, he says, lived by the produce of their fisheries.

Among the amphibious animals, the Tortoise^a of Brazil might be converted to use; and were the skins of the large Snakes^b, that are found there, tanned, they might be found serviceable.

The Cochineal^c is one of the most useful insects of Brazil. It is found in different parts, particularly in the island of Saint Catherine, Saint Paul, *Minas Geraes*. Although it is long since the utility of this insect was discovered, yet we have not availed ourselves of it so much as we might; for hitherto there have been extracted but few pounds of the colour. A production so very lucrative might be increased, were we to follow the example of our neighbours, who extract several hundred pounds of it every year. By a calculation made in the year 1736, it appears that there was imported to Europe every year, on an average, 880,000 pounds of cochineal, which amounted to near eight millions of Dutch florins; the third part of it was wild cochineal.

A particular species of Silk-worm^d, whose ball is three times as large as that of the common silk-worm, is found in abundance in *Para* and *Maranhão* in Brazil; it feeds on the leaves of the *atá* and orange trees. The colour of its silk is a dark yellow, resembling coffee. This species should be cultivated, and also the common silk-worm, as the Marquis

^a *Tesudo imbricata*.

^b *Boa fcyale*.

^c *Coccus cazi*.

^d *Pbalena atlas*.

Fernaon Cortez caused to be done in Mexico*. The people of *Minas Geraes* have already set the example.

In Brazil are found some Spiders^b that spin balls much larger than those of the spiders of Europe^c, in which they deposit their eggs; and these balls are of the finest filk. In the botanical garden belonging to the Queen of Portugal some of these spiders are cultivated, which were brought hither in the leaves of pine-apples. His Excellency the Marquis *de Lavradio*, among many other rare productions, brought from Brazil a species of spider that also yields filk.

The great quantities of wax that various species of bees^d produce in the shrubberies of Brazil and Angola ought to be more carefully attended to; some experiments ought to be made, in order effectually to purify it.

In the Azores, and Madeira islands especially, care should be taken of the cultivation of bees, and also of filk-worms.

In the island of St. Michael are found good sponges^e, and some red coral^f; and on the coasts of Cape Verde island, and of Brazil, are gathered little *murices*, from which is extracted a purple colour like that so highly prized by the ancients; and as well in each of these places as in Africa, are found pearl shells^g.

* *Manoel Severim de Faria*, *Diff.* i. § 4.

^b *Aranea avicularia*, *venatoria*.

^c *M. Ben Diff. sur l'utilité de la soie des araignées*. Avignon, 1748.

^d *Apis Mexicana*, *Brasilianorum*.

^e *Spongia officinalis*.

^f *Iis nobilis*.

^g *Mytilus margaritifera*.

Vegetable

Vegetable Kingdom.

Among the plants of the colonies are many unknown to botanists; and principally trees of great utility for the construction of ships or houses, for furniture or dying. Many of those in Brazil, however, will become rare in time, on account of the difficulty of transporting them from the interior of the country, as on the banks of the rivers the inhabitants are accustomed to burn down whole woods in order to cultivate *maize*^a and *mandioca*^b. The land thus manured they forsake in a few years, and pass to another wood which they reduce in the same manner; by these means are destroyed an immense number of useful trees, that might be easily transported.

Of dying-woods, besides those that are already known, are many others. His Excellency *Martinbo de Mello* ordered several of them to be examined in the chymical elaboratory of the *Ajuda* near Lisbon, and they were found to yield lakes of different colours; from one was extracted a rose-colour that is more permanent than that of the Brazil wood.

Concerning the timbers brought from *Babia* for ship-building, &c. some observations were made in the year 1760, by Colonels *de Brito* and *Weinboltz*. The gravity of a foot cube of each kind they found to be as follows:

	lb.	oz.
<i>Sucupirá merim</i> —may be used in every part of a ship	59	7½
<i>Páo de Arco</i> —serves for keels, stern-posts, ribs, and gunwales	66	7

^a *Zea mays*.

^b *Jatropha manibot*.

	lb.	oz.
<i>Páo roxa</i> —for the same uses, and also for beams of houses - - - - -	63	9 $\frac{1}{2}$
<i>Peguim</i> —deck-beams, knees, &c. &c. - - - - -	64	3
<i>Sapocaya</i> —keels, ribs, stern-posts, &c. - - - - -	73	7
<i>Jetaby amarello</i> —gunwales, ribs, &c. - - - - -	66	0
<i>Vinbatico</i> —planks, both above and under water, floors, &c. - - - - -	46	0 $\frac{1}{2}$
<i>Putumuju</i> —planks, floors, &c. - - - - -	48	0
<i>Louro</i> —yards, masts, and also for flooring houses - - - - -	37	3
<i>Jequitibá</i> —masts, top-masts, yards, &c. - - - - -	44	4
<i>Páo de olio do vermeilho</i> —for the same uses - - - - -	56	1 $\frac{1}{2}$
<i>Massarandubá</i> —for beams, posts, &c. - - - - -	68	6
<i>Ajetabiéba</i> —doors and windows of houses - - - - -	60	5 $\frac{1}{2}$
<i>Canduru</i> —bureaux, chairs, &c. - - - - -	48	2 $\frac{1}{2}$
<i>Sebastião d'Arruda</i> —for all kinds of valuable household furniture - - - - -	64	15 $\frac{1}{4}$
<i>Pequiba</i> - - - - -	43	4
<i>Jacarandá</i> —for elegant furniture - - - - -	59	3
<i>Olandim</i> —bowsprits, top-masts, cheeks, gunwales, and planks - - - - -	57	9
<i>Secupirassu</i> —pumps, anchor-stocks, &c.		
<i>Oyticica</i> —gunwales, &c.		
<i>Cedro</i> —for ornamental works about the cabin, stern, head, &c.		
<i>Páo de Jangado</i> —for staves, &c.		

Brigadier da Costa is at present about a very interesting work concerning the resistance of many of the timbers of Brazil and of the other colonies.

From

From the leaves of the tree called *Curagiru*, found in the village of *Balsemaon* in *Rio da Madeira*, is extracted a colour resembling carmine.

From the fruit of the *Urucú* ^a plant, the Indians, in various parts of Brazil, extract a colour with which they paint themselves. The French in Cayenne extract a great deal of this colour, and sell it for the purpose of dying, under the name of *Arkote*, or *Orleans*.

The bark of the *Araribá* tree in *Pará* and *Maranbaon* yields a fine purple colour.

On the coast of Africa, near *Rio Gaboon*, almost opposite to the island of St. Thomas, there grows a tree whose wood yields a purple colour that is permanent; this wood, of which the Dutch have made a monopoly, is called, after the river, *Gabaon*.

In *Piracuruca de Piauby* is a tree whose bark has a bitter taste, and possesses virtues similar to the Peruvian bark ^b; the leaves of both have a great resemblance. I do not find, however, that this bark, nor that of a tree in *Paraiba* which is similar in effect to the real Peruvian bark ^c, is turned to account.

If any of our naturalists, in their travels through Brazil, should happen to discover the tree that yields the genuine Peruvian bark, they should be very careful in sending it home, seeing the great utility that results from it. It would also be of great use, were they to transplant in that country the tea

^a *Bixa orellana*.

^b *Cirubena officinalis*?

^c As *Antonio Pereira*, physician to her Majesty, has proved by experiment.

tree^a, as the English have done in Carolina; and to increase the cinnamon of Ceylon^b, which is already found to grow in some of the gardens of Brazil. In the island of St. Thomas it is found in abundance, but unproductive, as the natives are unacquainted with the manner of gathering the aromatic bark.

In the year 1492, King John II. banished some Jewish families to the island of St. Thomas, who transplanted there cinnamon and pepper; and after a residence of thirty years they had sixty mills, which yielded near five million pounds of sugar.

Concerning the transplantation of the above plants I have already written. In the year 1675, when Doctor *Ribeiro de Macedo* was Envoy in France, he made some observations on the same subject.

In *Piauby* there grows a tree^c, from the wood of which might be extracted a fine yellow colour.

The blossom of the palm tree called *Ubuçu*, which grows in thick shrubberies, has a husk that is fibrous, elastic, and interwoven in such a manner, that it appears to have been warped in a loom. The Indians make caps of it.

Simauma^d, if mixed with wool or cotton, might be spun.

A species of *cassia*^e is found in Brazil; and also tamarinds^f.

^a *Thea bobea*.

^b *Laurus cinnamomum*.

^c *Cesalpinia Brasiliensis*.

^d *Bombax ceiba*.

^e *Cassia Javanica*.

^f *Tamarindus Indica*.

A new specie of *Puchari*, called precious fruit, grows in *Pará*, which is less than that already well known, and more aromatic; this fruit might supply the place of nutmegs.

The elastic resin^a, or *Caout chouc*, might be converted to many useful purposes.

The bark of various trees of the island of St. Thomas and of Brazil, when macerated in water, distend into fibres, of which strong cords might be made. And a species of the *Hibiscus*^b affords a filaceous substance, which may be spun like flax. The people of Brazil make a kind of flax of *Ticum*, which is a kind of palm tree; and also of *Gravatá*, and of *Coroa*, species of *Piteiras*.

In Brazil the cultivation of hemp is now attended to; but it is difficult to transport the seed to Europe; for, as it is very oleagenous, without great care in passing the Line, it becomes rancid, and consequently useless.

The trade of the *Curcuma*^c and *Ginger*^d, which grow in Brazil, the island of St. Thomas, &c. might be increased. The Dutch, one year with another, sell more than ten thousand pounds of ginger prepared with sugar, besides what they dispose of in its dry state. The Antilles supply Europe with more than 300,000 pounds weight of ginger.

The island of St. Thomas produces abundance of pepper^e, which, formerly, used to be transported to Antwerp. But

^a Vide Flor. Guian.

^b Hibiscus.

^c *Curcuma rotunda*, longa.

^d *Amomum Zingiber*.

^e *Piper recensum*. I ark. Clus. Exot. lib. x. pag. 184.

since it was prohibited, in order to encourage that of India, the pepper of this island has been neglected.

The celebrated *Antelmintico* so esteemed in Russia, (which is the *Arapabaca*, or *Spigelia Anthelmia**,) grows in various parts of Brazil; it is also cultivated in Jamaica.

The *Pastel**, a plant of great utility in dying, grows spontaneously in the island of Madeira; formerly it made a branch of our commerce; but at present cattle feed on it. This plant, when prepared, yields a blue colour which is more durable than indigo.

In the above island grows the *Rubia**, or *Garança*, called *Orelha de gato*, i. e. Cat's-ear; it likewise produces *Orcella*^d, the latter is found in abundance in Cape Verde.

Near the *Minas Geraes*, *Simon Sardinha* discovered a shrub, very different from the *myrica cerifera*, the stalk and branches of which are covered with a species of wax.

The real *Jalap** grows in *Para* and *Piauby* in Brazil; and likewise various kinds of *Contrayerva*^f.

In the island of St. Michael and Madeira, there grows a fern called *Fetabrun*, that yields a species of filken down of a dark yellow colour; which, when mixed with wool or cotton, can be spun.

* *Spigelia Anthelmia*. Vide Thef. Philos. Alexfii Ant. a Castro de Rio Furtado, pag. 20.

^b *Isatis tinctoria*.

^c *Rubia tinctorum*.

^d *Lichen rocella*.

^e *Convolvulus jalappa*.

^f *Dorstenia contrayerva*.

Several

Several medicinal plants, among which are the following, grow in Brazil; some of them are exported, others are but very little known:

<i>Liquidambar styracifolia.</i>	<i>Hymenæa courbaril.</i>
<i>Guajacum officinale.</i>	<i>Laurus sassafras.</i>
<i>Anacardium occidentale.</i>	<i>Winterania canella.</i>
<i>Myrtus caryophyllata.</i>	<i>Myrtus pimenta.</i>
<i>Smilax aspera.</i>	<i>Epidendron vanilla.</i>
<i>Croton cascarilla.</i>	<i>Euphorbia ipecacuana.</i>
<i>Viola ipecacuana.</i>	<i>Jatropha curcas.</i>
<i>Petiveria alliacea.</i>	<i>Sapindus saponaria.</i>
<i>Cissampelos Pereira.</i>	<i>Bursera gummifera.</i>
<i>Simaruba.</i>	

The two interesting discoveries of the celebrated chymist Sage* deserve to be mentioned here, because they should be known to all. The first relates to indigo; how to preserve it from moulding, and to heighten its azure colour. The other shews the manner of refining raw sugar without waste.

As to the indigo it is necessary to observe, that it contains a resinous matter, of a colour somewhat resembling lake, which, if extracted in the washing, prevents the indigo from being subject to mould, and the colour becomes more vivid, more permanent, and better adapted for dying. On the contrary, when it contains this resinous matter, the colour will run, if it be steeped in water.

Many years before Sage made this observation, a similar experiment was tried by me on the indigo of Brazil; not only

* *Elements de Mineralogie desimast. tom. ii. p. 388 and 391.*

in order to extract the resinous matter, but also a black earth or *humus* produced by the putrid fermentation to which the indigo plant is subject, and which communicates a dark colour to the indigo. If these be extracted, it will not be subject to mould; and the colour, afterwards, will stand, if boiled in water. This method is used by *Julio Mattiazzi* in the Royal Chemical Laboratory at Lisbon, wherein, every year, are purified several hundred pounds of indigo.

Respecting Sage's second observation. By the common manner of purifying sugar, in every hundred pounds thirty are lost in the form of molasses, in consequence of a portion of the sugar being burnt. This might be obviated by making the boiler flat at the bottom instead of conical as is customary, and by giving it no more heat than is necessary to produce a gentle boil. Thus will be obtained whiter sugar, that will not require to be washed in the *forms*; and as no part of it will turn to molasses, consequently none of the sugar will be lost.

The immense number of trees that are in Brazil, and in the other colonies, so far inland as to render the carriage extremely difficult, might be burnt for the purpose of extracting alkali, or *potasse*, as the French call it, who import it from Germany and Russia.

England bought of Russia to the amount of near a million German *escudos* of this *potasse*, before Mr. Stevens, in the year 1755, taught the Americans the manner of making it equal to that of the Russians.

Besides

Besides the balsams of *Capaiha*^a, of *Cabureiba*, and of *Acabureuta de Pison*, another, more valuable, is obtained from the tree of *Omiry*.

In the inland part of *Minas Geraes* is found the genuine varnish tree^b, such as that which supplies the Indians with varnish for their ware. The balsam of St. Thomas is a species of turpentine.

The Gum Copal^c of Brazil is well known, from the great use made of it by our varnishers. Another fossil called *Succinum Copal*, is found in *S. Paulo*, and in other parts of Brazil.

In Brazil is also found the resin of *Cajú*^d, which might supply the place of gum Arabic, or that of Senegal. Of the gum mastick, or *Elemi*^e and *Anime*^f of *Piauby*, and the *Jutuicifica* of *Para*, might be made sealing-wax.

Cape Verde, and some of the Azores islands afford great quantity of *Dragon's blood*^g.

Mineral Kingdom.

The Diamonds^h of Brazil are naturally set in a matrix of iron mineral, like those that are brought from the mines of *Golconda* and *Visapour*ⁱ, as I observed by some specimens which

^a *Copaifera officinalis*.

^b *Rhus vernix*.

^c *Rhus copallinum*.

^d *Anacardium occidentale*.

^e *Amyris elemifera*.

^f *Hymenæa courbaril*.

^g *Dracena draco*.

^h *Alumen gemma nobilis Adamar*.

ⁱ *Tavernier Voyages, seconde partie, lib. ii. chap. xv. pag. 267.*

are in the possession of *Gbildemeſter* the Dutch conſul at Liſbon, and by thoſe which are in the rich muſeum of the Marquis *de Angeja*. The diamonds found in rivers, are collected at a vaſt expence; they appear to have been forced thither by currents from the adjacent mountains, where diſcerning people trace their veins; and here they might be obtained with leſs trouble or expence than in rivers.

In the crevices of the mountains, and between *paraſitic ſtones*, are found *Cbryſolites*^a, *Saphires*^b, *Topazes*^c, *Emeralds*^d, *Agoas marinbas*^e, *Ametiſts*^f, and *Cryſtals*^g. And between *talk-ſtones* or *micacea* are found *Jacintbs* or *Granites*^h; the water-drops or *quartzos*ⁱ, are obtained fortuitouſly.

In *Piauby* is found abundance of *Muſcovy Glaſs*^k. And in *Minas Geraes* the *Amiantus Aſbeſtus*, and the *Amiantus fragilis*.

Of Alum^l there is an abundant mine in *Piauby*, and another in *Ciara*, which, when mixed with a red marl, makes ſalt-petre^m; a portion of it brought from *Babia* is found to be very pure; it was diſpoſed in thin horizontal veins, between layers of potters' clay and ſand hardened. Its colour is yellow, as may be ſeen by a ſample which is in the muſeum of the Marquis *d' Angeja*.

A mine of copperasⁿ has been diſcovered in the village of *Piracuruca* in *Piauby*.

- ^a *Sage*, min. T. i. pag. 232.
- ^b *Sage*, T. i. pag. 228.
- ^c *Sage*, pag. 225.
- ^d *Sage*, pag. 230.
- ^e *Borax beryllus*.
- ^f *Nitrum ſuor violaceum*.
- ^g *Nitrum cryſtallus montana*.

- ^h *Borax granatus*.
- ⁱ *Quartzum ſeleſtum*.
- ^j *Mica membranacea*.
- ^k *Alumen plumoſum*.
- ^l *Nitrum nativum*.
- ^m *Vitriolum Martis*.

The

The common salt ^a of some lakes in Brazil might be purified if we should want to make use of it.

From the small volcanos of the island of St. Michael is extracted sal ammoniac ^b.

In different parts of Brazil are seen various species of *pyrites* ^c; from some of which, besides sulphur, might be extracted copperas or alum; others, that are crySTALLIZED, contain a portion of gold.

In Angola is a rich mine of pure sulphur ^d and *selenite* ^e. And flour of sulphur ^f, produced by volcanos, is found in the islands of St. Michael and Cape Verde.

Some lakes in Angola afford a vast quantity of asphaltum ^g, similar to that of Judea and Sydon; the inhabitants careen their ships with it instead of pitch, and it is found to preserve the timber better from the corruption of worms ^h. The French often careen their ships with asphaltum; and that which the Venetians import from the Levant is converted to the same use.

On the coasts of Brazil are often seen large pieces of *ambergris* ⁱ, and also on the river Sena in Africa, and about the Cape Verd islands.

^a *Muria fontana*.

^b Sage mine. T. i. pag. 63. 312, 313. 337.

^c *Pyrites crystallinus*.

^d *Pyrites nativus clarus*.

^e *Natrum glaciale*.

^f *Pyrites nativus impurus*.

^g *Bitumen Maltha*.

^h *Teredo navalis*.

ⁱ *Ambra ambrofiaca*.

From *Maranbaon* has been brought a specimen of soft lead ^a, of which might be made black-lead pencils, not inferior to those of the English.

In the *Minas Geraes* are mines of *antimony* ^b, one of which yields 46 pounds *per* hundred weight; in purifying gold it is preferable to the *corrosive sublimate*. Here are likewise found native *bismuth* and iron minerals, which produce a good portion of gold.

From *Rio de Janeiro* I received a rich mineral of *pyrites copper* ^c; from an hundred weight of which, in an experiment, I extracted twenty-five pounds of pure copper.

There is a valuable mine of copper in the mountains between *Piauby* and *Jacobina*, and another in the *Minas Geraes*.

In *Caxeira*, a district of *Babia* in Brazil, a few years ago was discovered, a piece of native copper that weighs 2666 pounds. It is now deposited in the Royal Museum at Lisbon; no other museum in Europe can boast of such an enormous piece.

The rich iron ^d mine of Angola, through some error, is neglected. The iron mines of *Missao*, of *Jaico*, of *Piauby*, and those of *Mato Grosso*, of *S. Paulo*, and of *Ciará*, might certainly be turned to account, as these places abound in timber. Possessed of such mines, we need not be under the necessity of buying iron of foreigners, which, besides other loss, tends to increase

^a *Molybdenum plumbago*.

^b *Stibium striatum*, p. 13.

^c *Pyrites cupri*.

^d *Ferrum chalybeatum*.

the

the expence of working the gold and diamond mines. *Ferrum speculare*^a is found in *Villa Rica*.

Magnets^b are common in the captainship of *Piauby*, *Minas Geraes*, and other parts of Brazil.

From *Bahia* there has been lately brought a specimen of globular iron mineral^c, with balls of various size from two lines to half an inch. From this mine, besides iron, might be extracted, balls for muskets, and other pieces of artillery.

The gold mines in various parts of Brazil should be occasionally examined with a borer, and if water be found at hand, a fire-engine should be had in readiness to extract it; for without proper machines to draw out the water with facility when it is very deep, the mine, however rich, must be abandoned. Besides these mines there is also one in *Angola*, from which was brought a piece of *quartz* with gold.

On the river *Sena*^d, and on the coast of *Guinea*, we might avail ourselves, like the English and the Dutch, of the gold gathered by the negroes.

Platina is found in Brazil, as I observed in another place, mixed with a species of gold, called *dark gold*, on account of its fallow pallid colour.

With respect to earths, red ochre^e is common in *Maranhao*, *Para*, *Piauby*, and in the island of *S. Miguel*.

^a *Minera ferri nigra specularis.*

^b *Ferrum magnes.*

^c *Minera ferri subaquea, globosa. Wall. min.*

Tom. ii. pag. 257.

^d *Aurum nativum in minera ferri rubricosa.*

^e *Ochra ferri pulverea rubra.*

Among the yellow ochres^a of *Para* and of *Rio Capim* is found a red ochre, as brilliant in colour as vermilion.

Terra sombra^b, for paint, similar to that of^c Cologne, is to be had in *Piauby* and *Maranhao*.

White argil, or bole^c, called *Tabatinga*, and likewise red bole^d, abound in various parts of Brazil, particularly at *Para*.

The island of S. Miguel, besides marls for manuring land, affords the fullers'-earth^e, so highly prized in England that the exportation is prohibited under pain of death. The Dutch formerly used to import it from this island.

From the isles of the Açores might be imported *pumice stone*^f.

Aqua acidula, similar to those which we import from Spa, might be had from the island of St. Thomas.

Many other rare and useful productions still remain unknown in our transmarine dominions. Those above mentioned, however, might serve to diminish the importation of the commodities of foreigners, to supply our wants and extend our commerce.

- ^a Ochra ferri.
- ^b Argilla umbra.
- ^c Argilla bolus alba.

- ^d Argilla bolus rubra.
- ^e Argilla fullonica.
- ^f Pumex Vulcani.

C H A P. XVI.

Constitution and Government.

“THE sovereigns of this country, (says a Portuguese writer,) are absolute, and acknowledge no superior but God. Yet, though their power be unlimited, they occasionally consult their tribunals and councils, the better to direct their decisions and ordinances.”

The crown of Portugal is hereditary; and by the fundamental laws it is ordained, that in case of the King's demise without male issue, he shall be succeeded by his next brother; but the male issue of this brother shall not ascend the throne, without being previously elected King by the states.

By the same law it is ordained, that the succession, in default of male issue, shall devolve on the female line, on condition that the princess do marry a Portuguese nobleman. The husband, in this case, must not assume the title of King, till he shall have a male child by the Queen. When in her company, he shall always take his place at her left hand; and he must never wear the Royal crown.

The observance of the above laws are strictly enjoined by the third and fifth statutes of *Lamego*, which statutes may be considered as the *Magna Charta* of Portugal; they are eighteen

in number, and were framed in the year 1145, at the town of *Lamego*, by Alphonso the first King of Portugal, assisted by his prelates and nobles.

The 6th statute is made in the name of the King, and runs thus: "This law shall be observed for ever. The eldest daughter of the King shall have no other husband but a Portuguese Lord, least any foreign prince or lord be sovereign of this kingdom. And in case the eldest daughter of the King marry a foreign prince or lord, she shall never be acknowledged as Queen of this realm; in order that our subjects may not be ruled by an alien king. We have been raised to the throne without the aid of foreigners, by our subjects and compatriots, who have shed their blood for us; and never shall they submit to be governed by any but a Portuguese."

By the 9th statute it is ordained, that those of the blood Royal, and their descendants, shall be of the highest order of nobility; and that such as guard the person of the King, or of his son, shall be of the class of nobility. That the descendants of Moors, Jews, and all other infidels, can never aspire to nobility*. That the sons of Portuguese, who die faithful Catholics in captivity among infidels, shall rank as nobles. That he who kills an hostile king shall be entitled to the same rank; and that all who fought at the battle of *Ourique*, in consideration of their valour, shall be ennobled.

Statute 10. specifies the cases in which nobility shall be forfeited, namely, cowardice in battle; treason; perjury; blas-

* These distinctions were abolished by two Acts of Joseph I. passed in the years 1773 and 1774; pursuant to which, persons

of the above description are now held eligible, in common with their fellow-citizens, to all the honours and employments of the state.

phemy;

phemy; theft; or desertion to the Moors. For wounding a woman with a lance or a sword; refusing to expose life in defence of the King's person, or that of the Prince his son; or in defence of the Royal standard. For speaking ill of the Queen, or of the Princesses her daughters; for concealing truth from the King.

Among the penal laws it is ordained, that murder shall be punished with death. If a delinquent be convicted of theft, he shall be exposed in the market-place, with his back naked, for the two first offences; for the third, he shall be branded on the forehead with a hot iron; and if he transgresses a fourth time, he shall be sentenced to die; this, however, cannot be put in execution without the express order of the King.

The law respecting adultery has its singularity. If the parties be convicted of the offence, both the man and woman shall be committed to the flames. But if the husband pardon the adulteress, which he shall be at liberty to do, then the adulterer shall be pardoned also. He who violates a lady of nobility shall forfeit his life, and all his property shall devolve on her. But if she be not of a noble family, then the violater shall take her to wife, whether he be a nobleman or a plebeian.

John III. in the year 1526, ordained, that delinquents found guilty of theft should not, as heretofore, be branded on the forehead. "It is unjust," said the King, "that persons punished, as well with a view to reform them, as for transgressing the established laws, should, after commuting their crime and reforming their conduct, carry the mark of infamy to the
"grave

"grave like incorrigible knaves. Besides, persons so stigmatized are shunned by the virtuous and abandoned to the company of the wicked, whereby they become more hardened in iniquity, and consequently more dangerous than before."

The laws administered throughout the kingdom are founded upon the Roman jurisprudence: whenever an extraordinary case occurs, that is not provided for by the national code, the judge decides it agreeably to the Roman law.

Formerly, before a candidate for the long robe was admitted, he must have studied the law for the term of nine years; stood six different examinations, and maintained three public theses. After a lawyer had passed some years in the practice of his profession, he was eligible to the function of a counsellor in Parliament, but his admission depended upon his abilities; he was first examined in the principles of the civil law, in the King's council-chamber, and the day following interrogated in ancient and modern jurisprudence. Such were the qualifications required of a lawyer in the reign of John the First; at present the road to preferment and power in this line is much shorter, and less rugged.

C H A P. XVII.

Royal Titles.—Nobility.—Orders of Knighthood.

THE King's titles are, *Don* — *King of Portugal and of the Algarves, on this side and on the other side of the sea, in Africa. Lord of Guinea, and of the Conquest, Navigation, and Commerce of Ethiopia, Arabia, Persia, India, Brazil, &c.*

The title of the heir apparent is *Prince of Brazil*; and that of his eldest son, *Prince of Beira*. The rest of the Princes of the blood Royal are called *Infante*.

The Sovereigns of Portugal had but the title of *Senhoria* or *Lord*, till King Emanuel took that of *Most Serene Highness*. John V. was complimented by the Pope with the title of *Most Faithful Majesty*.

Pope Eugenius, at the solicitation of Edward I. granted the Kings of Portugal the privilege of being crowned and anointed like the Sovereigns of England and of France.

The title of *Don*, or *Dom*, which was formerly given only to kings and personages of the blood Royal, is now assumed by every nobleman, and gentleman descended of noble families; and by all persons holding posts of honour under the Crown. *Faria* observes, that *Palagius*, who began the restoration in Spain, at

the beginning of the eighth century, was the first who had this title prefixed to his name.

The nobility are of four classes; namely, Dukes, of whom there are two; Marquises, fourteen; Counts, thirty-four; and Viscounts, seven. We do not include in this number the heirs apparent of the nobility, to whom it is customary to give their father's title.

The orders of knighthood are three; *viz.* 1st, The order of Aviz, whose institution is coeval with the foundation of the Portuguese monarchy; its endowments, at present, are eighteen towns, and forty-nine commendams.

2dly, The order of St. James, instituted soon after the above, was subject to the grand-master of Castile till the time of King Diniz. It possesses a considerable revenue from forty-seven towns and villages, and one hundred and fifty commendams.

3dly, The order of Christ, was instituted in the year 1319, by King Diniz, after abolishing the order of Templars. It possesses twenty-one towns and villages, and four hundred and fifty-four commendams; the *decima* of the produce of the conquests belongs to the grand-master of this order; an office which no subject has filled since the reign of John III. who annexed it to the Crown. The mastership of the two foregoing orders is also vested in the Crown, although the Sovereign displays but the ensignia of the order of Christ.

In former times, the order of Christ was conferred only on persons whose descent and valour reflected honour on it; but

of late years it has been indiscriminately bestowed. Her Majesty, to the great satisfaction of her subjects in general, reformed this abuse, by an *Alvara* of the 9th of November 1789, and since then it is held in high request, even among the first class of nobility.

C H A P. XVIII.

Revenue.

CONCERNING the amount of the revenue of the Crown there are various opinions; some rate it at three, others at four millions sterling. Certain it is, that of late years it has been considerably augmented by the additional duties imposed on foreign merchandize, the establishment of trading companies, and the improvements made in the national commerce and manufactures.

From the registers of the Portuguese fleets it appears that, in the space of sixty years, ending in 1756, there was brought from Brazil to Portugal upwards of 100 millions sterling in specie, exclusive of private property; and yet the ready specie in circulation is supposed to fall short of a million and a half sterling. Among other causes, the want of industry, and neglect of agriculture, were not the least efficient in draining the nation of its immense treasures. Besides, it is supposed

that the Spaniards carried away, between the years 1584 and 1626, upwards of 200 millions of gold cruzados, or twenty millions and a half sterling. However that was, it is well attested that, in the year 1754, the finances were so impoverished, that government could scarcely make up 750 thousand pounds sterling, whilst the national debt exceeded three millions. In the following year happened the fatal earthquake, by which upwards of a million of specie was lost*.

It was reserved for the superior abilities of the Marquis de Pombal to save a country thus involved in the deepest distress. One of the most eminent services this great man rendered the public, was the establishment of a Royal treasury, in 1761, by

* In the Introduction to a history of Portugal, published at Lisbon in 1788, may be seen the following general estimate of the losses sustained in consequence of the earthquake of 1755:

	Livres, Tournois.			
England lost	-	-	-	160,000,000
Hambro	-	-	-	40,000,000
Germany	-	-	-	2,000,000
Italy	-	-	-	25,000,000
Holland	-	-	-	10,000,000
France	-	-	-	4,000,000
Sweden	-	-	-	3,000,000
The rest of Europe	-	-	-	8,000,000
Total loss of foreign nations				- 252,000,000
Losses sustained by the Portuguese.				
Royal palace, Patriarchal church, Custom-house, public offices, and Theatre Royal	-	-	-	25,000,000
Churches and private houses	-	-	-	700,000,000
Moveables of every kind	-	-	-	1,200,000,000
In sacred utensils, ornaments, statues, &c appertaining to the churches	-	-	-	32,000,000
In specie	-	-	-	25,000,000
In diamonds and other precious stones	-	-	-	50,000,000
Diamonds of the Crown	-	-	-	30,000,000
Total				2,314,000,000

which,

which, and his other patriotic institutions, the nation rapidly advanced to prosperity; infomuch, that at the death of his Royal master, which happened a few years after, the treasury was found to contain eight millions sterling, notwithstanding the vast sums lavished by this minister to accomplish his ambitious views.

C H A P. XIX.

Military and Marine.

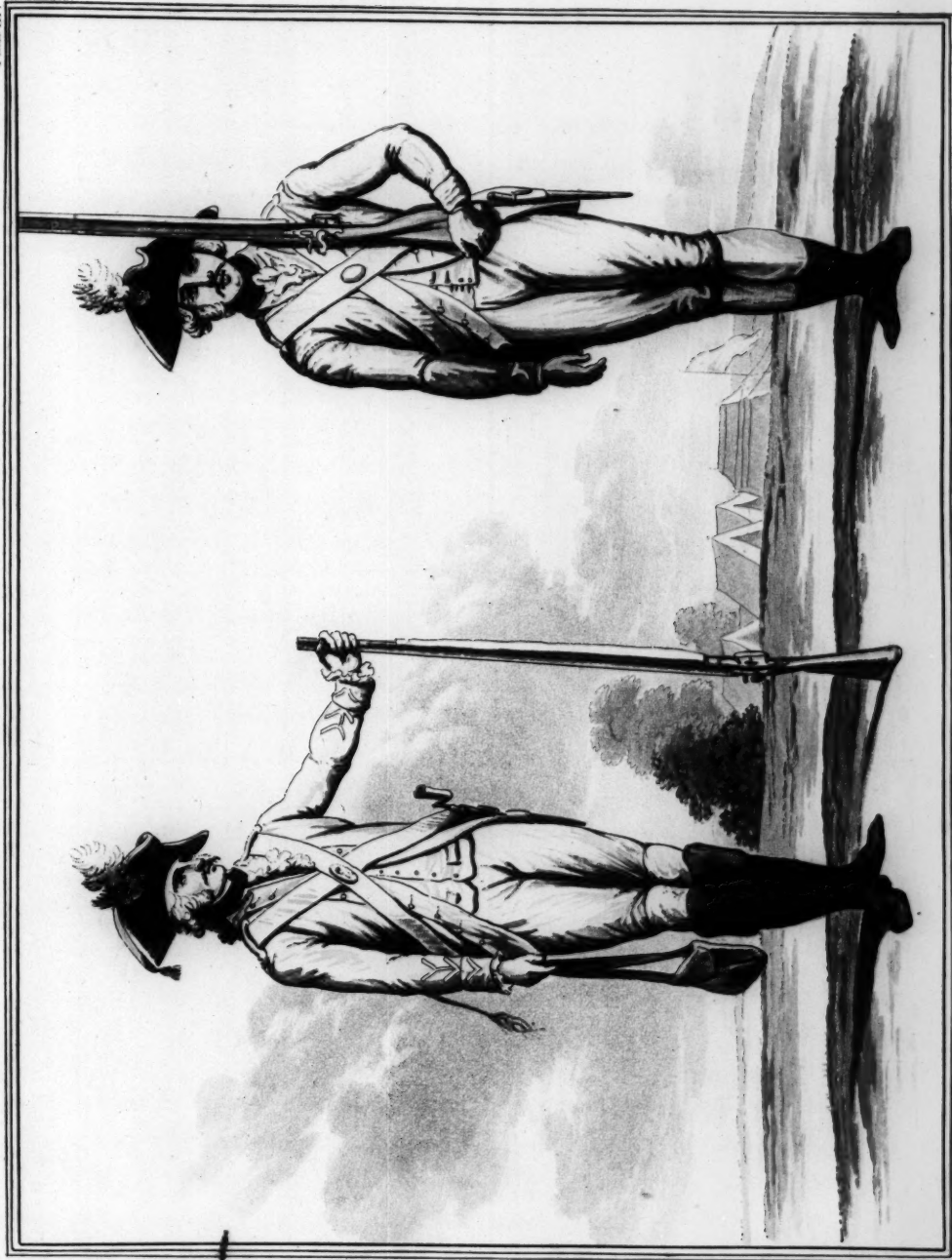
THE military establishment of Portugal, at present, consists of twenty-nine regiments of infantry, including four battalions of artillery and a corps of engineers; making, all together, about twenty thousand men. The cavalry are divided into eleven regiments, and consist of about four thousand. The militia, and auxiliaries of the different provinces, are computed at twenty-five thousand; the latter receive half-pay on the peace establishment.

The uniform of both infantry and cavalry are blue coats and white facings; the marine corps wear green coats. The breeches is generally of a colour with the coat, and the waistcoat is either white or buff-colour. The rest of their uniform may be collected from plate III.

“ At

" At the beginning of the war of 1762, the army was in a
" most wretched state, scarcely amounting to ten thousand
" men; most of whom were peasants, embodied in haste,
" without uniforms, without arms, asking charity, whilst the
" officers served at the table of their colonels." Such is the
picture given by a French writer, of the military of Portugal,
before Count de Lippe was called thither. To this able general
the kingdom is indebted for the restoration of military disci-
pline, which, unfortunately, a temporary security has since
relaxed. The nation has great cause to regret the narrow
system of policy that induced the King's ministers to dispense,
so prematurely, with his services; until at least he ascer-
tained the extent and direction of mountains, and other na-
tural barriers, the course and rapidity of rivers, the position
and strength of fortresses, so necessary to be laid down in
charts and plans, in order to prosecute a campaign upon scien-
tific principles. Of these great requisites they have yet but a
very imperfect knowledge; nor are their neighbours and natu-
ral political enemies the Spaniards much better informed in
this respect. Hence an engineer in the service of the latter has
observed, perhaps with a good deal of truth, that the two
powers, since the foundation of their respective monarchies,
have not made one judicious campaign.

With respect to the naval force, though it is much improved
of late years, still it is greatly inferior to what it had been under
John III. This Monarch is allowed to have surpassed all his
predecessors in attention to maritime affairs; during his reign,
twenty men of war and four large galleys were constantly in
commission, to protect the coasts of the kingdom, and convoy
the rich fleets returning from the colonies, exclusive of the dif-
ferent



ferent fleets that were stationed on the coasts of India and China.

When John IV. ascended the throne, scarcely a ship of these escaped the ravages of the Spaniards; indeed the marine force of the kingdom was in a manner annihilated; and its arsenals stripped and demolished. Some efforts were made to recover this fatal blow; but its progress was so very slow, that at the beginning of the reign of Joseph I. there were but five sail of the line, and about the same number of frigates; most of which were dismantled, without sailors or officers. The aid of foreigners were at length called in, particularly the English and French, to teach the art of ship-building and navigation to a people who, during the last two centuries, were sovereigns of the ocean; and whose voyages and discoveries rose their reputation over all other nations.

A kingdom so advantageously situated for commerce, and possessed of such vast resources as Portugal, with the impenetrable woods of Brazil at its command, and so many fine ports and bays on its coasts, might readily recover its former respectability by sea, as it has now brought the art of ship-building to a high degree of improvement. Its marine force, at present, is computed at thirteen sail of the line and fifteen frigates.

In the year 1789, the pay of the officers of the Royal Navy were fixed, by order of her Majesty, as follows:

		<i>On service.</i>	<i>Not on service.</i>
		<i>Reis.</i>	<i>Reis.</i>
Vice Admiral, <i>per month,</i>	-	400,000	200,000
Rear Admiral,	-	200,000	100,000
			Commander

A GENERAL VIEW OF THE

	<i>On service.</i>		<i>Not on service.</i>	
	<i>Reis.</i>		<i>Reis.</i>	
Commander of a squadron,	100,000	—	50,000	
Commander of a division,	80,000	—	40,000	
Captain of a first-rate,	45,000	—	30,000	
Captain of a frigate,	36,000	—	24,000	
Second Captain,	30,000	—	20,000	
First Lieutenant,	15,000	—	10,000	
Second Lieutenant,	12,000	—	8,000	
Midshipman,	3,000	—	3,000	

C H A P. XX.

Portuguese Conquests.

ALTHOUGH the modern Portuguese have no claim to the title of a brave or warlike people, yet their ancestors were undoubtedly a hardy martial race. Accustomed, under their first sovereigns, to the exercise of arms, and the dangers of the camp, in expelling the Arabians, who had infested their country, they became habituated to dangers and difficulties. In the meridian of their high military spirit, John I. ascended the throne; a wise and valiant Prince, whose example and authority inspired his subjects with a love of freedom and action;

action; and who might be said to have laid the foundation of those stupendous conquests which, in the space of little more than two centuries, they made in Africa, Asia, and America.

Under John III. they had no less than thirty-two foreign kingdoms, and four hundred and thirty-three garrisoned towns tributary to them. "No nation, since the creation of the world," says a celebrated Latin historian, "crossed so many seas, or passed over so many countries so distant from each other, as the Lusitanians. No nation, since the origin of mankind, made settlements in so many remote coasts, and led out so many colonies. This seems to have been peculiar to the Romans, Macedonians, and Phœnicians; but the Lusitanians were their superiors. For the Romans, at no time, settled colonies but within the confines of their own empire, the extent of which did not exceed ninety degrees from West to East; whereas the Lusitanians extended theirs beyond the bounds of two hundred and fifty degrees. No nation ever subjected to its dominions countries and kingdoms so remote as the Lusitanians. More nations, indeed, have subjected more kingdoms, but not so distant. The Lusitanians not only reached the most remote regions, but also settled therein, and reduced the natives to subjection."

"He who would form an idea of Portuguese valour, let him consider the prodigious extent of the territories they have conquered; the immense seas and promontories they have explored; the heavens, the stars, and planets they have observed; the hunger, thirst, heat, cold, and fatigue they have
R "suffered;

“suffered; the fierce, barbarous, and warlike nations they
“have subdued; the sieges they have sustained; the fortresses
“they stormed; the battles they fought; the victories they
“gained.”

Without exaggeration, it may be said, they performed prodigies of valour under the Pacheos, the Albuquerque, and the Almeidas. The conquests of these celebrated characters in the Eastern world, gave a new turn to the trade of Europe. The riches of Asia, hitherto conveyed thither from Alexandria and Barut, chiefly by the Venetians, now flowed through a different channel. Lisbon became the emporium of these treasures. The silks of Bengal, the cinnamon and rubies of Ceylon and Pegu, the diamonds of Narfinga, the pearls of Calacar, the spicery of Malabar, and all the various productions of Persia and Arabia, of the coasts of China and Japan, were transported from Goa to Portugal by numerous fleets, and thence distributed among the different nations of Europe.

Their conquests in Africa extended along the sea-coast from *Ceuta* to the *Cape of Good Hope*, and thence to the mouth of the Red Sea; that is, nearly the whole circumference of this quarter of the globe, in which they possessed *Ceuta*, *Tangiers*, the kingdoms of *Congo* and *Angola*. They had fortresses in *Monomotapa*, *Zafala*, *Mozambique*, *Quiloa*, *Pemba*, *Melinde*: and almost the whole of the African islands belonged to them; of which they still possess *Madeira*, *Corpo Santo*, *The Azores*, *Cape Verd*, *Del Principe*, *St. Thomas*, &c.

The

The Portuguese conquests in India extended from one extreme of it to the other; that is, according to their division of Asia, from the Cape of Good Hope to Cape Ciampa in China. The distance betwixt these two capes, measured along the coast, exclusive of the Red Sea, or Persian Gulph, is computed at twelve thousand miles, which distance they divide into seven parts.

The first lies between the Cape of Good Hope and the mouth of the Red Sea.

The second part is situated between the mouth of the Red Sea and the Persian Gulph, containing all Arabia; of their former settlements in this division they retain none at present.

The third part reaches from the mouth of the Persian Gulph to that of the river Indus. In this division is the city of *Ormuz*; from which the Portuguese were driven by the Persians, assisted by the English.

The fourth extends from the Indus to Cape *Comorin*. Here they had many cities, garrisons, and fortresses, particularly the city of Goa, the capital of all their dominions in India, which they still possess.

The fifth division lies between Cape *Comorin* and the Ganges; it contains the ports of *Negapatam*, *Masulapatan*, and the fort and city of *Meliapor*; from all of which they have been expelled.

“ suffered; the fierce, barbarous, and warlike nations they
“ have subdued; the sieges they have sustained; the fortresses
“ they stormed; the battles they fought; the victories they
“ gained.”

Without exaggeration, it may be said, they performed prodigies of valour under the Pacheos, the Albuquerque, and the Almeidas. The conquests of these celebrated characters in the Eastern world, gave a new turn to the trade of Europe. The riches of Asia, hitherto conveyed thither from Alexandria and Barut, chiefly by the Venetians, now flowed through a different channel. Lisbon became the emporium of these treasures. The silks of Bengal, the cinnamon and rubies of Ceylon and Pegu, the diamonds of Narfinga, the pearls of Calacar, the spicery of Malabar, and all the various productions of Persia and Arabia, of the coasts of China and Japan, were transported from Goa to Portugal by numerous fleets, and thence distributed among the different nations of Europe.

Their conquests in Africa extended along the sea-coast from *Ceuta* to the *Cape of Good Hope*, and thence to the mouth of the Red Sea; that is, nearly the whole circumference of this quarter of the globe, in which they possessed *Ceuta*, *Tangiers*, the kingdoms of *Congo* and *Angola*. They had fortresses in *Monomotapa*, *Zafala*, *Mozambique*, *Quiloa*, *Pemba*, *Melinde*: and almost the whole of the African islands belonged to them; of which they still possess *Madeira*, *Corpo Santo*, *The Azores*, *Cape Verd*, *Del Principe*, *St. Thomas*, &c.

The

The Portuguese conquests in India extended from one extreme of it to the other; that is, according to their division of Asia, from the Cape of Good Hope to Cape Ciampa in China. The distance betwixt these two capes, measured along the coast, exclusive of the Red Sea, or Persian Gulph, is computed at twelve thousand miles, which distance they divide into seven parts.

The first lies between the Cape of Good Hope and the mouth of the Red Sea.

The second part is situated between the mouth of the Red Sea and the Persian Gulph, containing all Arabia; of their former settlements in this division they retain none at present.

The third part reaches from the mouth of the Persian Gulph to that of the river Indus. In this division is the city of *Ormuz*; from which the Portuguese were driven by the Persians, assisted by the English.

The fourth extends from the Indus to Cape *Comorin*. Here they had many cities, garrisons, and fortresses, particularly the city of Goa, the capital of all their dominions in India, which they still possess.

The fifth division lies between Cape *Comorin* and the Ganges; it contains the ports of *Negapatam*, *Masulapatan*, and the fort and city of *Meliapor*; from all of which they have been expelled.

The sixth is situated between the Ganges and Cape *Sincanor*; wherein the Portuguese have been stripped of all their possessions by the Dutch.

The seventh is bounded by the Capes *Sincanor* and *Ciampa*. Here they had a considerable trade, but very few settlements.

In the island of *Ceylon* they possessed *Columbo*, *Manar*, and *Gale*. They had garrisons in the islands of *Solor*, *Timor*; in the *Molucco* islands *Ternate* and *Tidore*; and also in *Ambonia* and *Macao*. They have still a colony in the last.

But the finest of all the Portuguese colonies is Brazil in America; it is nearly nine hundred leagues long from North to South; by four hundred and twenty-five broad from East to West. On the North it is bounded by the river Amazons and Guiana; on the East, by the ocean; on the South, by Rio del Plata; and on the West, by the country of the Amazons. Its coast is said to be fifteen hundred leagues in extent.

After the nation became a province of Spain, in consequence of the disaster of King Sebastian, the Dutch seized upon several of the most flourishing establishments of the Portuguese in Asia, under pretence of their being subjects of the King of Spain, with whom they were at war; and since then they have made a monopoly of the spicery of the East. They also took many of the Portuguese settlements on the coast of Guiepa, and a great part of Brazil. But they were entirely expelled the last, as soon as the Braganca family ascended the throne, in the revolution of 1640.

C H A P. XXI.

Coins, ancient and modern.

THE most ancient coins of this kingdom, existing in the cabinets of the curious, are supposed to be those of Quintus Sertorius, the famous Roman Captain, who came to Portugal about eighty-three years before the Christian era. His profile, representing the wound he received in his eye, is sculptured on one side; on the reverse is a representation of his favourite hind*, leaning against a tree.

Of the coins struck in the kingdom under the dominion of the Roman Emperors, several have been accidentally discovered, from time to time; but from the implacable enmity of the Portuguese, in former ages, to every vestige of antiquity, very few of them are preserved; those of gold and silver were melted down; and as for the antique copper coins, they were considered of so little value, that it was not uncommon, says *Faria*, to see tinkers use them in mending old pots.

Of the Goths, who succeeded the Romans, a few coins are preserved, that appear to have been struck towards the close of their dominion in Spain and Portugal, from the reign of *Leovigildus* to that of *Roderick*, the last of their kings. Most of

* See the life of Sertorius, in Plutarch.

these coins are of base metal, and of mean workmanship; they are charged with the effigy of the reigning sovereign, with crosses, devices, and inscriptions. Several Moorish gold, silver, and copper coins are still preserved; which are known by their Arabic legends.

Since Portugal was formed into an independent monarchy, a great variety of coins were struck in it; of which we here present an alphabetical list, with the name of the Sovereign under whom each was first coined.

Name of the Coin.	Under whom coined.	Name of the Coin.	Under whom coined.
<i>Alfonfim,</i>	- Alfonso IV.	<i>Justo,</i>	- John II.
<i>Aureo,</i>	- Sancho II.	<i>Leal,</i>	- John II.
<i>Barbuda</i>	- Fernandus.	<i>Livra,</i>	- Alfonso III.
<i>Calvario,</i>	John III.	<i>Maravedim,</i>	Sancho I.
<i>Ceitel,</i>	- John I.	<i>Nomeada,</i>	- John I.
<i>Conceição,</i>	John IV.	<i>Pegas,</i>	-
<i>Coroa,</i>	- Edward.	<i>Pê-Terra,</i>	- Fernandus.
<i>Cruzado,</i>	- Alfonso V.	<i>Pilarte,</i>	- Fernandus.
<i>Dinheiro,</i>	—	<i>Portuguez,</i>	- Emanuel.
<i>Dobra,</i>	- Diniz.	<i>Quatro Vintems,</i>	John III.
<i>Ducataon,</i>	- Sebastian.	<i>Real,</i>	- John I.
<i>Engenhoço,</i>	- Sebastian.	<i>Sinquinbo,</i>	- John II.
<i>Escudo,</i>	- Edward.	<i>Soldo,</i>	- John I.
<i>Espadim,</i>	- John II.	<i>Talento,</i>	- Sancho I.
<i>Forte,</i>	- Diniz.	<i>Tornezes,</i>	- Peter I.
<i>Frizante,</i>	—	<i>Tostlaon,</i>	- Emanuel.
<i>Gentil,</i>	- Fernandus.	<i>S. Vicente,</i>	- John III.
<i>Grave,</i>	- Fernandus.	<i>Vintem,</i>	- Alfonso V.
<i>Indios,</i>	- Emanuel.		

When Pope Pius II. issued the famous crusade-bull, to excite the states of Europe to war with the Turks, Alfonso V. of Portugal

tugal ordered a coin to be made, which, in reverence for that bull, he called *Cruzado*. On one side is represented the cross of St. George, with this legend, *Adjutorium nostrum in nomine Domini*. On the reverse is an escutcheon bearing the Royal arms, with a crown over a cross of the military order of *Avis*; and this inscription, *Cruzatus Alphonsi Quinti R.* Cruzados are the most current coins in the kingdom to this day; there are two kinds of them, viz. *Cruzado Velha*, and *Cruzado Nova*; the former is worth 2s 3d. the latter 2s 8½d. In calculating by *cruzados*, as the Portuguese commonly do, the former is always meant or understood.

The largest pieces were those coined at Lisbon in the reign of King Emanuel, called *Portuguezes*. They were made of the gold brought chiefly from Asia; each of these coins, or rather medals, was worth five hundred ducats.

Of all the coins formerly used in Portugal, the *ceital* was the smallest; 350 of them were worth but four pence of our currency; they were first coined by order of John I. and were current till the beginning of Sebastian's reign.

The following are the current coins of Portugal at present:

Gold,		Value in Reis.		Value in English Currency.
<i>Dobraon</i> ,	- -	24,000	- -	£. 6 15 0
<i>Half Dobraon</i> ,	- -	12,000	- -	3 7 6
<i>Dobra</i> ,	- -	12,800	- -	3 12 0
<i>Half Dobra</i> ,	- -	6,400	- -	1 16 0
<i>Quarter Dobra</i> ,	- -	3,200	- -	0 18 0

Eightb

A GENERAL VIEW OF THE

Gold.		Value in Reis.		Value in English Currency.	
<i>Eighth Dobra,</i>	-	1,600	-	0 9 0	
<i>Sixteenth Dobra,</i>	-	800	-	0 4 6	
<i>Cruzado,</i>	-	400	-	0 2 3	
<i>Moidore,</i>	-	4,800	-	1 7 0	
<i>Half Moidore,</i>	-	2,400	-	0 13 6	
<i>Quartinbo,</i>	-	1,200	-	0 6 9	
<i>Cruzado Nova,</i>	-	480	-	0 2 8 $\frac{1}{2}$	
Silver.					
<i>Cruzado Nova,</i>	-	480	-	0 2 8 $\frac{1}{2}$	
<i>Twelve Vintens,</i>	-	240	-	0 1 4 $\frac{1}{8}$	
<i>Six Vintens,</i>	-	120	-	0 0 8 $\frac{1}{8}$	
<i>Toslaon,</i>	-	100	-	0 0 6 $\frac{3}{4}$	
<i>Three Vintens,</i>	-	60	-	0 0 4 $\frac{1}{8}$	
<i>Half Toslaon,</i>	-	50	-	0 0 3 $\frac{3}{8}$	
<i>Vintem,</i>	-	20	-	0 0 1 $\frac{3}{4}$	
Copper.					
<i>A piece of</i>	-	10	-	0 0 0 $\frac{5}{8}$	
<i>A piece of</i>	-	5	-	0 0 0 $\frac{1}{2}$	
<i>A piece of</i>	-	3	-	0 0 0 $\frac{3}{4}$	
<i>A piece of</i>	-	1 $\frac{1}{2}$	-	0 0 0 $\frac{1}{2}$	

C H A P. XXII.

Antiquities and Curiosities.

THE admirers of antiquity cannot contemplate, without indignation, the ravages committed by ignorance and fanaticism, in former ages, on the venerable remains of ancient Lusitania; even at the time when the cultivated nations of Europe eagerly sought to preserve every fragment of Greek and Roman art, the Portuguese, with religious zeal, continued to demolish every stone distinguished by the sacred hoar of time. At length John V. in the year 1721, at the instance of the Royal Academy of Portuguese History, issued an edict interdicting, under severe penalty, this detestable practice in his dominion. Unfortunately, however, the Sovereign's protection came at a time when nearly every monument of its former pride was buried in oblivion.

History informs us, that there had formerly been a temple, dedicated to Minerva, near *Lisbon*. To Venus, at *Evora*. To Jupiter, at the town of *Torraon*. To Proserpina, at *Villa Viçosa*. To Isis, at *Braga*. To Ceres, at *Guimarenes*. To the Sun and Moon, at *Cintra*. At *Santiago de Cacem* was a temple and statue, dedicated to Vulcan; besides the temples and statues of Tiberius, Trajan, Nero, Agripina, &c. which were erected in different parts of the kingdom. Of all these, not a vestige remain at this day.

At Chaves, a town in the province of *Entre Douro e Minho*, anciently called *Aguas Flaviae*, there were discovered, not long since, the remains of a magnificent aqueduct, baths, cisterns, several pieces of columns, capitals, and cornices of jasper, exquisitely worked. From these, it is manifest that there had formerly been some splendid structures here; but the only one remaining at present is the bridge leading over the river Tamego to the town of *Chaves*. Its length is ninety-two paces; the breadth, twenty-six palms, within the parapets; and the height thirty-two. This bridge was built by the inhabitants of *Aguas Flaviae*, in the time of the Emperor Trajan; as appears by the following inscription, the extype of which is carved on one of the peers:

IMP. CAES. NERVA
 TRAIANO. AUG. GER.
 DACICO. PONT. MAX.
 TRIB. POT. COS. P. P.
 AQUIFLAVIENCES
 PONTEM. LAPIDEUM
 D. S. F. C.

Hoc est—*Imperatoris Caesaris Nervæ Trajano, Augusto, Germanico, Dacico, Pontifici maximo, Tribunitiæ potestatis, Consuli, Patri Patriæ, Aquiflavienses pontem lapideum de suo fieri curaverunt.*

Near the city of Braga are the remains of a temple, supposed to have been built by the Romans, and dedicated to Esculapius. And a short distance thence is another ancient structure, that has nothing remarkable in its design or workmanship, though it is called the *Capitolonian Tower*.

Several capitals of the Corinthian order, with columns, bases, and other architectural vestiges of exquisite workmanship, have been found among the ruins of the ancient city of Braga; and also an ancient sepulchre containing a leaden chest, wherein was inclosed a phial with ashes.

The venerable *Argote* has published copies of a great number of inscripational stones, discovered here at various times. *Gruter* has also noticed many of them. In the collection of the former is one that mentions a *cobort* being sent from *Braga*, to assist the Romans in the conquest of England. It runs thus:

L. FURIO. L. F. PAL. VICTORI
PRAEF. PRAE. TRIB. LEGIONIS. II.
ADIVTRIC. 7 COH. BRACARUM
IN. BRITANIA.

Hoc est—Lucio Furio Victori Lucii filio, Palatinae tribus, Praefecto Praetorii, Tribuno legionis secundae Adjutricis, Centurioni Cohortis Bracarum in Britannia.

An equestrian statue, cast in silver, of Alfonso, the first King of Portugal, was placed in a church at *Evora*, by order of that Monarch; where it was preserved with great veneration for many centuries, till the finances of the Fathers growing low, they were tempted to consign it to the crucible.

In the territory of *Belas*, near Lisbon, was found, in the reign of John III. a stone chest, containing a sword and the remains of the famous Viriatus, as appeared by the following inscription, which was carved on the lid of it:

HIC JACET VIRIATUS
LUSITANUS DUX.

A person of the name of *Machado*, who discovered this antiquity, offered the sword for sale; but finding his countrymen placed no value upon it, he gave it to a friend of his in the island of *Madeira*, where it was lost.

A gentleman of the family of the Mascarenhas, who had travelled in Italy, and acquired a taste for the fine arts, collected, from different parts about the town of *Mertola*, twelve ancient statues, with a view to place them on pedestals in his country-house: But as he lived not to complete his intention, these admirable productions of Roman art, the venerable representations of heroes and sages were hurled into a lime-kiln to make cement for the chapel of St. John.

A similar want of curiosity and discrimination have left us to lament the loss of a valuable monument, which, according to Emanuel de Faria, was found on the top of a mountain in one of the Azores islands, when discovered by Fernando Po; namely, an equestrian statue, which, together with its pedestal, were formed of one stone. The head of the figure was bare; his right hand pointing to the West, the left rested on the horse's main; on a rock beneath were cut certain characters which none could decypher.

The Temple of Diana, the aqueduct and castellum, in the city of *Evora*, which were built by Quintus Sertorius, are deservedly ranked among the most splendid remains of Roman antiquity. The Roman wall, which formerly surrounded this city,

city, was destroyed by order of King Ferdinand, for the purpose of building a new one, which he never effected. The walls of *Santerem* are partly of Roman and partly of Moorish workmanship; with some modern additions. We have already described the magnificent Roman mines of the provinces of Minho and Tras-os-Montes. Some remains of ancient military roads and ways are still to be seen in divers parts of the kingdom, particularly about *Braga*.

Among the chief natural curiosities of this kingdom may be reckoned the mountains, lakes, mineral waters, &c. described in the foregoing Chapters. To these may be added, the botanical gardens of Lisbon, the cabinets of natural history of the same city, and of Mafra, Coimbra, Evora, and Beja.

Of works of art, the most noted in Lisbon and its district are, the cathedral, the new church, the beautiful altar and Mosaic works of the small chapel in the church of *S. Roch*. The equestrian statue of Joseph I. (See plate I.) The custom house, arsenal, and armory.—The sumptuous aqueduct over the valley of *Alcantara*.—The monastery of S. Jerome, with the palace and tower at *Bellem*.—The immense basilick of *Mafra*, with its library, gardens, &c.: and above all, the curiosities of *Cintra*; which, besides its Royal palace, convents, and Moorish remains, abounds with the most sublime views.—The cabinets of medals and of natural philosophy at *Lisbon*, *Mafra*, and *Coimbra* are also well worth the attention of every judicious traveller.

The modern buildings of chief note in the provinces are, the convents of *Batalha*, *Alcobaga*, *Thomar*, and *Santa Cruz*. The three first are situated in villages or towns of the same name; the

the last is in the city of *Coimbra*; where there are many other structures of considerable note. The bridge leading to this city, which was built by Sancho I. is one of the best in the kingdom. The bridges of *Ponte de Lima*, *Obaves*, and *Amarante* are likewise well constructed; the last was raised with the alms gathered by one *Gonzalo*, a dominican friar. In the palace of the *Count de Barcellos*, in the province of *Minho*, are several columns, brought by one of the ancestors of this nobleman from Africa, as trophies of his victories. Remains of Moorish and Masorabic castles, fortresses, and churches may be seen in almost every town and village of the kingdom.

C H A P. XXIII.

Ceremonies used at the Death of the Kings of Portugal.

FORMERLY it was customary, in this country, to hire women called *Pranteadeiras*, i. e. crying women, to mourn over the deceased; and to celebrate their virtues. When the person happened to be of distinguished rank, a multitude of these women were employed to chaunt lachrymal hymns, in which they detailed, in extempore stanzas, the praises of the defunct. If a king, they pointed out the wars he had been in; the dangers he encountered; the victories and triumphs he obtained; that like a kind father he always loved and protected his subjects;

jects; that he never oppressed them with taxes, nor squandered his riches.

This ceremony obtained in Portugal till the reign of John I. White mourning was used there, as still is customary in China, till the time of King Emanuel; it was also the mourning dress of the Spaniards till the reign of Ferdinand of Castile. The first time that black was used for mourning in Portugal, was at the death of Dona Filippa, aunt to King Emanuel.

On the death of the King, messengers were immediately dispatched to the different provinces to announce the same; whereupon the churches were put in deep mourning; the bells were muffled, and a temporary cenotaph was erected in every cathedral and parish church, around which the people assembled to pay homage to the memory of their departed Sovereign.

When the time of interment arrived, the corpse was conducted, in procession, from the senate-house, where it lay in state, to one of the most public parts of the city. After the chief mourner came the nobility, the judges, officers of the court, and three aldermen dressed in long mourning cloaks. A herald followed on horseback, carrying a mourning ensign; and after him came a train of cavaliers. Three ministers of state, each carrying an escutcheon with the Royal arms, next advanced, attended by two sheriffs.

The procession having arrived at the first station, the coffin was placed on an estrade. Here the sheriffs, surrounded by a multitude of people, proclaimed the death of the King; after this,

this, one of the ministers raised up the escutcheon and dashed it to pieces against the ground; on seeing which, the people set up hideous lamentations. This ceremony being repeated at two other places, they proceeded to the place of sepulture, where the body was interred with great solemnity. Three days after, it was usual to perform the ceremony of the inauguration of the new King.

C H A P. XXIV.

Manners, Customs, Dress, and Diversions.

IN describing the manners and customs of the Portuguese, most travellers make a distinction between the Northern and Southern provinces. The former are reputed industrious, candid, and adventurous; the latter are more civil, but less sincere; more dissimulating, and averse from labour. All ranks are nice observers of ceremonies: in dealing with a merchant or tradesman, some years ago, it would have been less dangerous to fail in payment of a debt than a point of *etiquette*. This ostentation, however, is much worn off at present, by their communication with the northern nations, whom, in opposition to every difference in religious sentiments, they esteem and imitate.

The

The manners and customs of the Jews and Moors, which had taken deep root in the country, are not yet eradicated; many vestiges are still discernible, particularly among the inhabitants of the interior provinces, who have little or no intercourse with strangers. The descendants of the latter are very numerous; they are distinguished by the round face, regular features, swarthy complexion, black hair, and sparkling eyes. From these people are derived the bull-feasts, and the custom of sitting cross-legged on cushions. The jealousy of the Portuguese too may be traced to the same source. The pensive solitary manners of the Jews, their love of onions, garlic, and plaintive music, still obtain in a few villages.

It is remarked by all the valetudinarians who have resorted thither of late years, that the people in general are averse from society; which some, not thoroughly acquainted with the national character, have erroneously attributed to an antipathy to strangers. Whatever society exists among the natives of Lisbon, is chiefly confined to the nobility; between whom and the other classes, policy, or custom, or a mistaken idea of true honour, has drawn a line of separation. There are some, however, who disdain to be circumscribed by such narrow bounds, and are no strangers to the free exercise of hospitality. "On all public occasions, either at home or abroad, the nobility affect a great display of pomp, mixed with gravity; and hence they are reputed vain, presumptuous, and proud, which gave occasion to Gratian to remark,

" *Que serian famosos,*

" *Si non fuesen fumosos.*

" How illustrious would they be,

" If bloated not with vanity.

T

" But

" But the learned Feijó has observed, that " all this pompousness is merely the result of a sprightly imagination. The urbanity and politeness with which they treat every person, are incompatible with that haughty and imperious arrogance attributed to them. They are valuable friends to such as solicit their patronage, and have been always esteemed for acts of benevolence." " For my part," says Guevara, in one of his epistles, " I think the Portuguese nobility are cautious in their actions, and pointed in their words *."

Among the middling and subordinate ranks, the females especially, there is very little intercourse, except fortuitous meetings in the churches and streets. Every class of tradesmen has a distinct oratory, supported by the voluntary contributions of their society; here they assemble every evening, before supper, to chaunt vespers. They rarely visit each other's houses but on particular occasions, as weddings and christenings; and then they entertain very sumptuously, or rather satiate with profusion.

Jealousy, and an innate disposition to secrecy, are assigned as the chief causes of this separation. They hold it as a maxim, that he who talks least thinks best; and that the most perfect man is not he who has most good qualities, but fewest bad ones. Pride might also operate, as they wish not to shew their apartments, no more than their wives and daughters, unless they be arrayed in their best attire.

* *De Castro. Mappa de Portugal.*

Yet,

Yet, however we may regret the many innocent enjoyments of which the females are thus deprived, their seclusion is productive of much domestic felicity. Their bland and simple manners are not liable to be corrupted, nor their attachments dissipated by an extensive communication with the world. The fond husband, thus solaced, is happy, supremely happy in the society of a virtuous partner, whose sole affection is concentrated within the narrow circle of her family.

As to their persons in general, the women are rather below than above the middle stature, but graceful and beautiful. No females are less studious of enhancing their attractions by artificial means, or counterfeiting, by paltry arts, the charms that nature has withheld. To the most regular features, they add a sprightly disposition and captivating carriage. The round face, and full fed form, are more esteemed in this country, than the long tapering visage and thin delicate frame. Most nations entertain some peculiar idea of beauty in the lineaments and cast of the face; that of the Portuguese will be best understood by their own description of a perfect beauty, which is as follows:

The forehead should be broad, smooth, and white. The eyes large, bright, and quick, but at the same time still and modest. With respect to the colour, there are divers opinions; some prefer the blue, some the black, and others the green. A Portuguese, named Villa-Real, wrote a treatise in praise of the last. The eye-brows should be large, of a black colour, and form an arch concentric with that of the eye-lid. To be properly adjusted to the rest of the face, the nose should descend in a direct line from the forehead, and form a regular pyramid.

The mouth, the portal of the human structure through which the messengers of the intellect have constant egress, ought to be rather small than large. The lips rather full than thin; rather relieved than sunk, and the edge of a pure carnation. Teeth are accounted beautiful when they are white, regular, and of equal size, resembling a row of pearls set in an arch of ruby.

The cheeks must be smooth, and somewhat relieved; the centre of a pure carmine colour, fading insensibly into a lily white; both colours so perfectly blended and proportioned, that neither should predominate.

With respect to the neck, there is great majesty in one which is large and smooth, rising from the shoulders like an alabaster column.

But among all the female charms, the most transcendent are the breasts. In form they should resemble a lemon; in colour and smoothness, the orange blossom.

The most beautiful hands are long and white; the fingers full and tapering. Feet are not accounted pretty if they be not small.

Of the stature, the middle size is most admired. Without a graceful walk, the most perfect beauty appears awkward; whereas a modest, airy, and serene movement, enhances every other charm; and bespeaks the tranquillity of a mind formed in the school of virtue and decorum.

The view in Plate IV. which was taken at Lisbon in the year 1790, will give a better idea of their apartments, and the

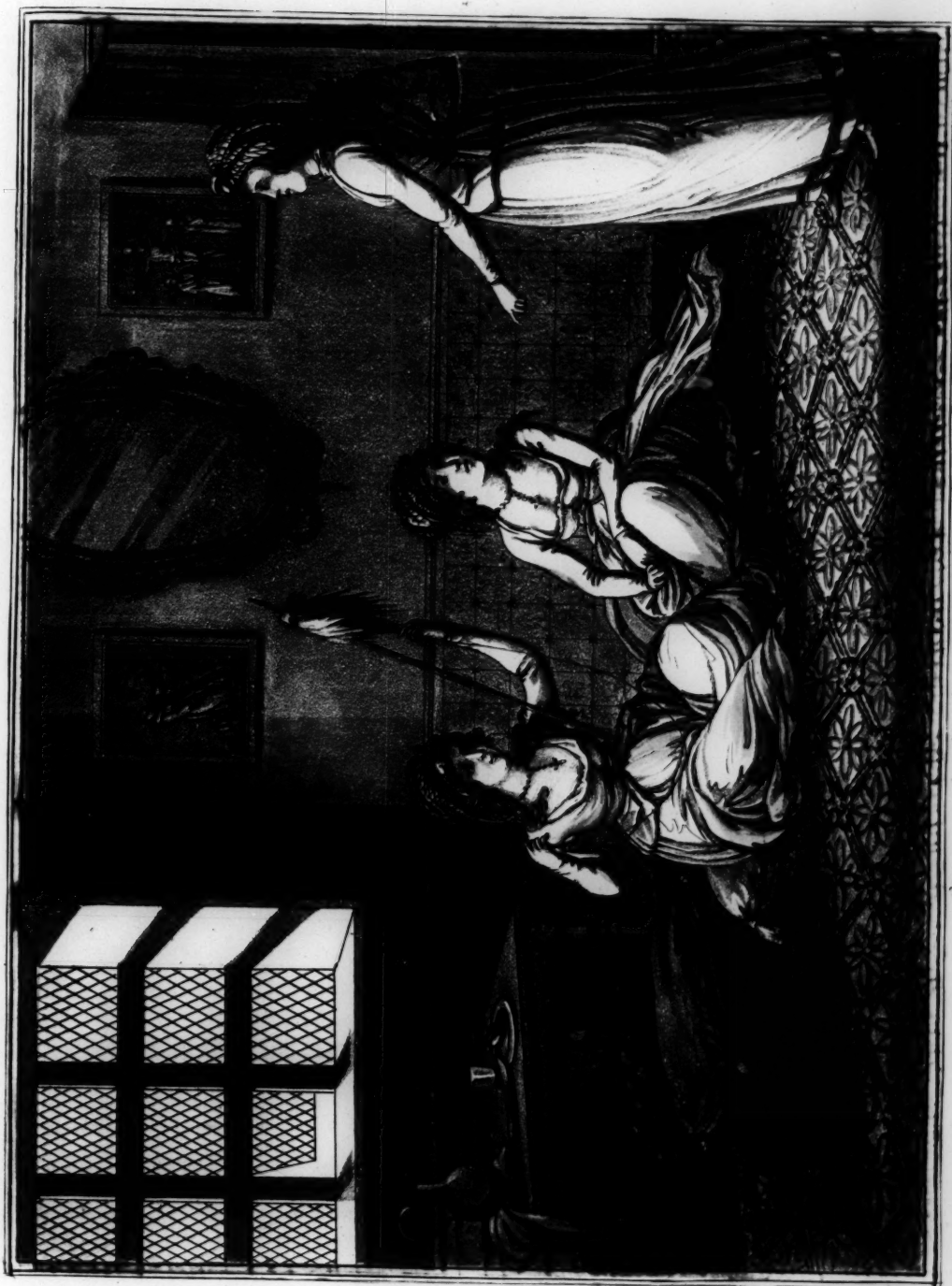


Plate IV.

Interior View of a Prostitute's apartment.

Painted by G. B. Davis, July 17, 1897.

domestic habiliments of the females, than we can convey by words. They usually sit in the manner here represented, upon cushions; which, among the better sort, are of crimson velvet. One of their principal employments is spinning flax, for which they still use the spindle and distaff. The women of the province of Minho are so celebrated for this branch of industry, that formerly it was customary to conduct the bride to the house of her spouse, preceded by a youth carrying a spinning apparatus. In the houses of the most respectable merchants, traders, and farmers, the female part of the family disdain not to occupy their time in this manner. Accomplishments, such as people of very humble circumstances in England commonly bestow on their daughters, as dancing, music, drawing, and languages, are unknown here; even among ladies of the first rank.

Cottons, muslins, and coloured silks, they very rarely wear. A kind of black garment called *mantilha*, over a petticoat of the same colour, both of woollen cloth or silk, but oftener of the former, is the usual dress, except in Lisbon, where the women wear black silk *mantos*; a kind of garment that covers the head and upper part of the body. Cloaks and petticoats of divers colours, made of woollen cloth, fringed with gold lace or ribands, are worn by the inferior ranks. The country-women, except on Sundays and holidays, still wear the ancient national dress—a jacket and petticoat. See Plate V.

With respect to the dress of the men, it differs not from that of the English or French, except in one garment, namely the *capot*, like that of the Spaniards and Italians; and even this, of late years, is much disused, as it has been often known to serve for worse purposes than covering a ragged coat. It
is

is an excellent garment, however, for travelling in winter. (See Plate VI.)

To describe the dresses of the several religious orders is foreign to our purpose; let it suffice, therefore, to observe, that the difference in their respective habiliments consists more in the colour than in the shape. Plate VII. in which is a representation of a friar of the order of *S. Bento*, and of a nun of the order of *S. Theresa*, may serve to convey a general idea of the dress of the religious of both sexes.

The intermediate class between the nobility and merchants is composed of men of small independent property in lands or houses, derived from their fathers, or purchased with the fruits of their own industry; in the capacity of merchants or factors, or by their œconomy whilst in office under government. These are the *gentlemen* of Portugal. Comparatively speaking, they are few in number, but their virtues are many. Protectors of the poor, benevolent and humane citizens of the world. Men, who, whilst they enlighten the nation by their talents, and pursue its most substantial interest, are the most ready and able to protect and maintain its rights.

There is one class of people here, than whom, perhaps, few nations can produce a more inoffensive and industrious, and at the same time, a more degraded and oppressed; these are "the pillars of the state," the peasantry, who are kept in a state of vassalage by a band of petty tyrants, assuming the title of *Fidalgos*.*

* "Fidalgo, a gentleman, one nobly descended. From the Portuguese word *filho*, a son, and the Spanish *algo*, something; that is, the son of something, or

"a son to whom his father had something to leave; viz. an honour and estate; thence, for shortness, called *fidalgo*."

Vieyra.

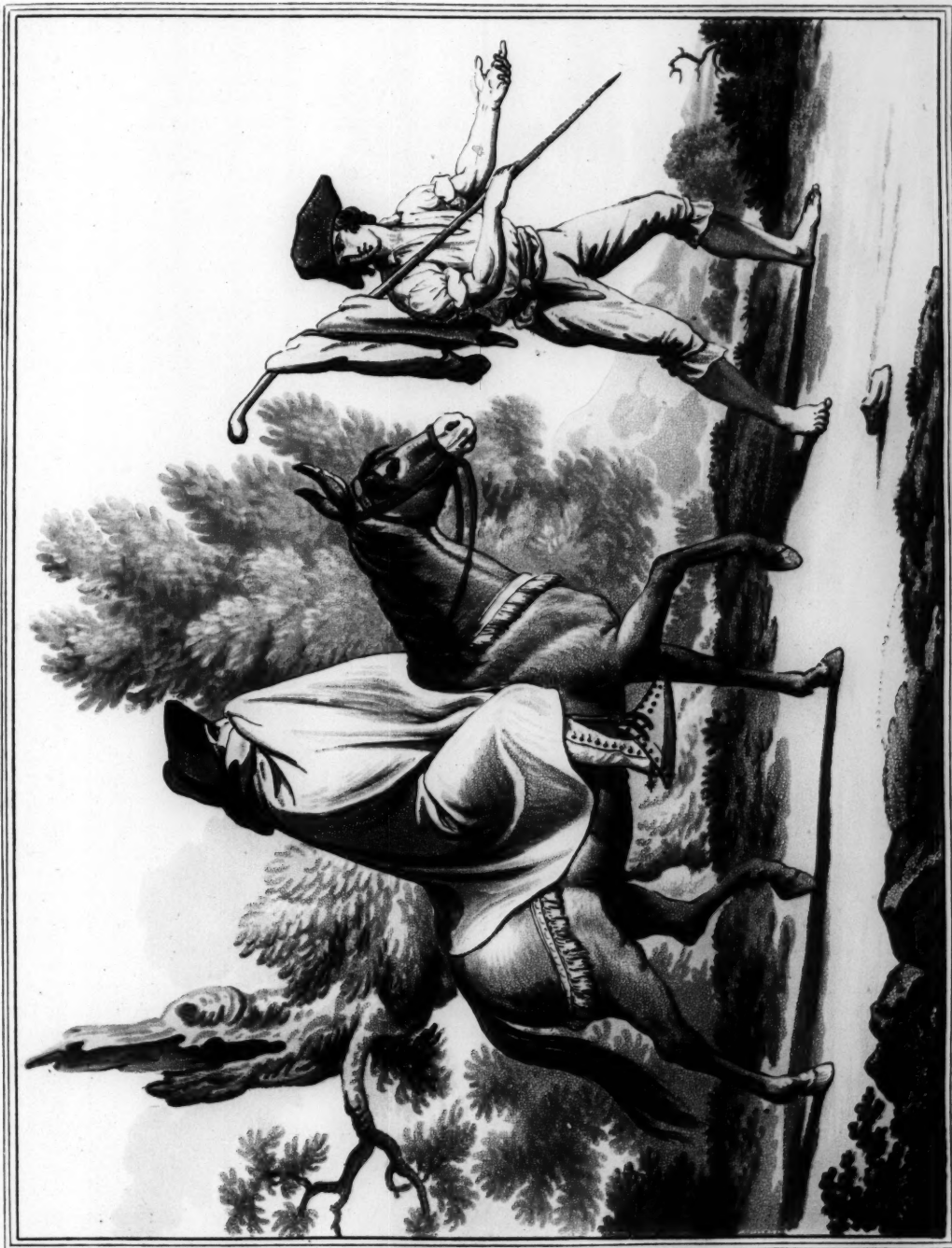
Among



Published by G. Bell & Duns, Aug 1, 1861.

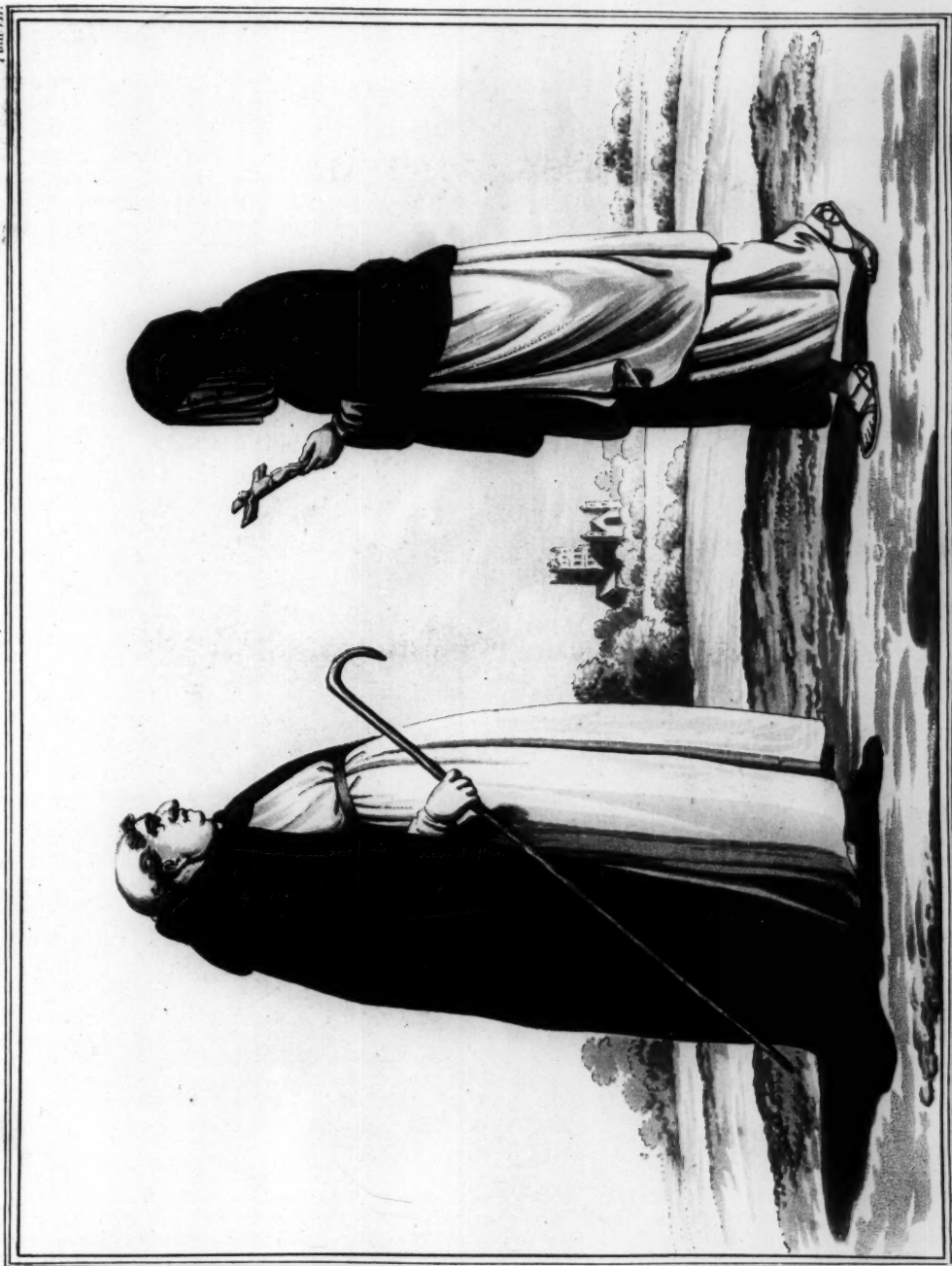
Perseus - Perseus

Plate V.



London: Published Jan. 1846, by G. & J. Davis, Strand.

A Portuguese gentleman on a journey.



London: Published Jan. 1827, by Gaskell & Davies, Strand.

(A. D. 1827, and a. S. 1827.)



Among those, to whom this title properly appertains, there are undoubtedly many who have a just claim to honour and respect; not from the antiquated immunities of feudal times, but from their personal virtues. We entirely separate them from the ignorant, intolerant wretches, who grind the face of the poor, and depopulate the land.

Indeed, I am informed by a Portuguese gentleman of very high rank, who sincerely deplores the wretched state of the peasantry of his country, that the chief part of their miseries is owing not to government but to these gentry. I know not how to give the reader a just idea of them; by privilege they are gentlemen, in manners clowns; beggars in fortune, monarchs in pride. Too contemptible for the notice of the Sovereign, to excite the jealousy of the nobles they are too weak; but too strong for the peasantry, from whom they exact adoration. They are to be seen in every town, in every village and hamlet, wrapt up to the eyes in capots, brooding over their imaginary importance. The industrious husbandman must not address them but on his knees. His fate, and that of his family, are at their mercy. On the most trivial pretence, they cite him to the court of the next *camarca*, or shire. The wretched farmer, in vain, attempts to justify himself, and after exhausting his resources to fee lawyers, he is sure to be cast at the end of a tedious and vexatious suit. His property is then seized upon, even to his very implements; and if it be not found sufficient to answer all demands, he is doomed to perish in a prison. Many industrious families have been thus annihilated; and others, apprehensive of sharing the same fate, have forsaken their lands, and often the kingdom, to seek protection in the colonies.

Beggars

Beggars are a formidable class in this country. Several laws have been enacted from time to time, to diminish the number and restrain the licentiousness of this vagrant train, but in vain. They ramble about, and infest every place, not entreating charity, but demanding it. At night they assemble in hordes at the best mansion they can find, and having taken up their abode in one of the out-offices, they call for whatever they stand in need of, like travellers at an inn; here they claim the privilege of tarrying three days, if agreeable to them.

When a gang of these sturdy fellows meet a decent person on the highway, he *must* offer them money; and it sometimes happens that the amount of the offering is not left to his own discretion. Saint Anthony assails him on one side, Saint Francis on the other; having silenced their clamour in behalf of the favourite saints, he is next attacked for the honour of the Virgin Mary; and thus they rob him for the love of God.

In the year 1544, a law was made, tending to decrease the number of beggars with which the kingdom was infested. By one article it was ordained, that the lame should learn the trade of a taylor or shoemaker. That the maimed, for their subsistence, should serve those who would employ them; and that the blind, in consideration of their food and raiment, should devote their time to one of the labours of the forge, blowing the bellows.

With respect to diversions, hunting, hawking, and fishing, which were formerly practised, are now very much disused; indeed, there are but few parts, except in the province of Alentejo, wherein the first can be well exercised, on account of the moun-

mountainous surface of the country; besides, the want of good cattle is another obstruction; for such is the feebleness of the horses and mules, that they are obliged to employ oxen in drawing all their vehicles of burden. See Plate VIII.

Horse-racing is a sport to which they are utter strangers, nor do gentlemen ride abroad for amusement but very seldom; and then a guide must attend them, lest they should lose their way. See Plate VI.

People of fashion, and delicate persons, usually travel in litters, as represented in Plate IX. And ladies sometimes take short excursions in the country, upon an ass, or a mule, equipped as in Plate X.

In passing through the streets, the people in general are fond of riding fast; but in the country they move very deliberately, inasmuch that it is not unusual to see even the post-boy sleeping on his mule. See Plate XI.

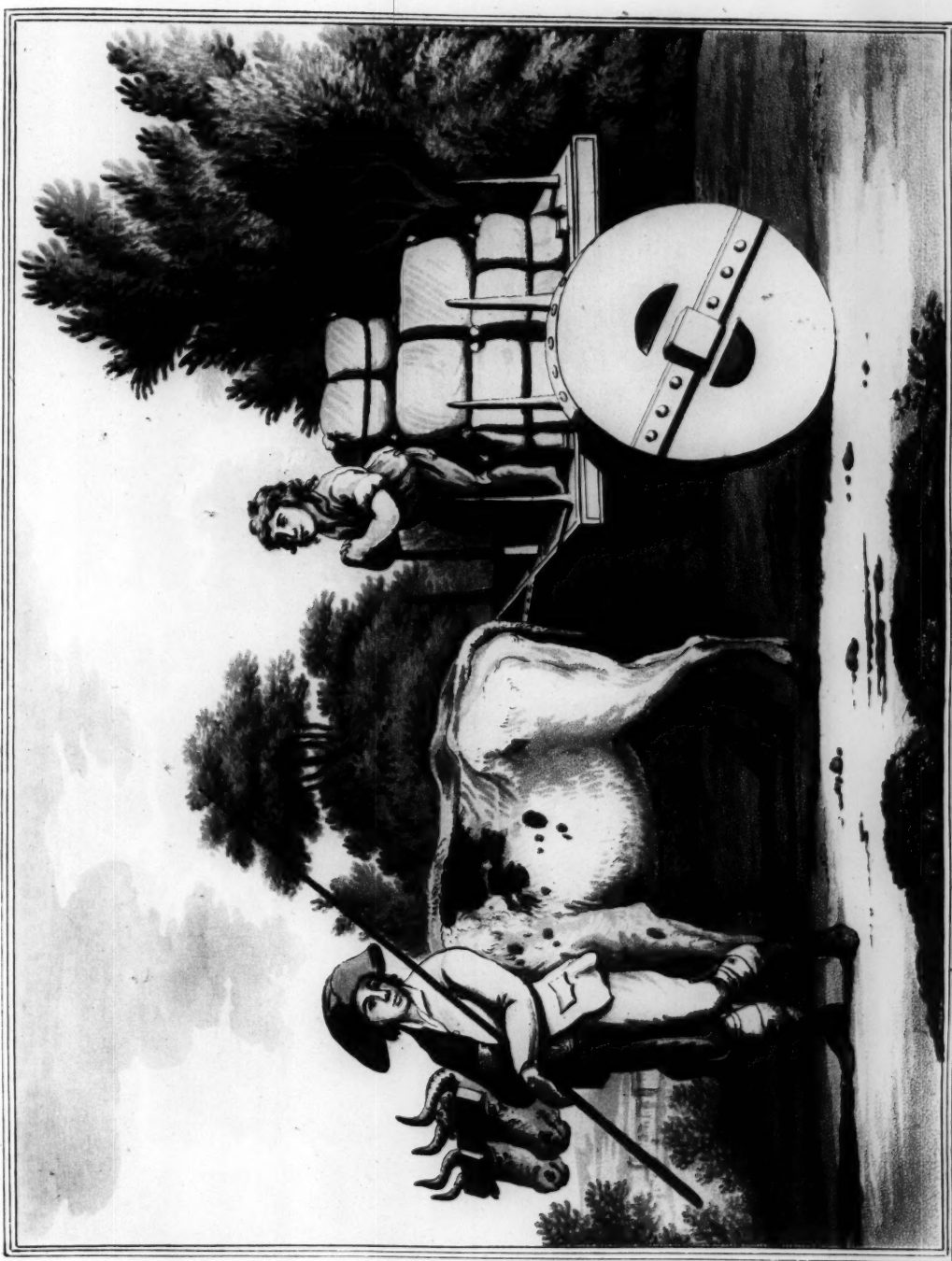
Billiards, cards, and dice, particularly the two last, are the chief amusement of every class. Their only athletic exercise is bull-fighting, and fencing with the quarter staff: The latter is confined to the common people; the former has been so often described, that we shall only offer a few words on the subject.

Plate XII. is a representation of a scene, considered among the pedestrian combatants, the most masterly and perilous of the arena. The principal actor is he who rushes between the horns of the bull; an act that requires no less courage than

muscular strength of arms to perform with safety, so that the animal can neither pierce nor throw him. In this posture he is carried about the ring, amidst the shouts of the audience, till the rest of the combatants rescue him, by overthrowing the bull; which, in this instance, agreeably to the rules of the circus, becomes their property.

Plate XIII. is a representation of the manner in which the equestrian actors perform their part. The pedestrian at the side of the horse holds a mantelet of red or yellow silk, in order to divert the attention of the bull, should the cavalier be hard set in the combat, or unhorfed; in this case, or should he happen to be thrown out of the saddle, or drop his hat, or be deranged in any respect, he is bound by the laws of chivalry to avenge the affront by encountering on foot, with a short dagger, until he dispatches the animal, or the animal dispatches him.

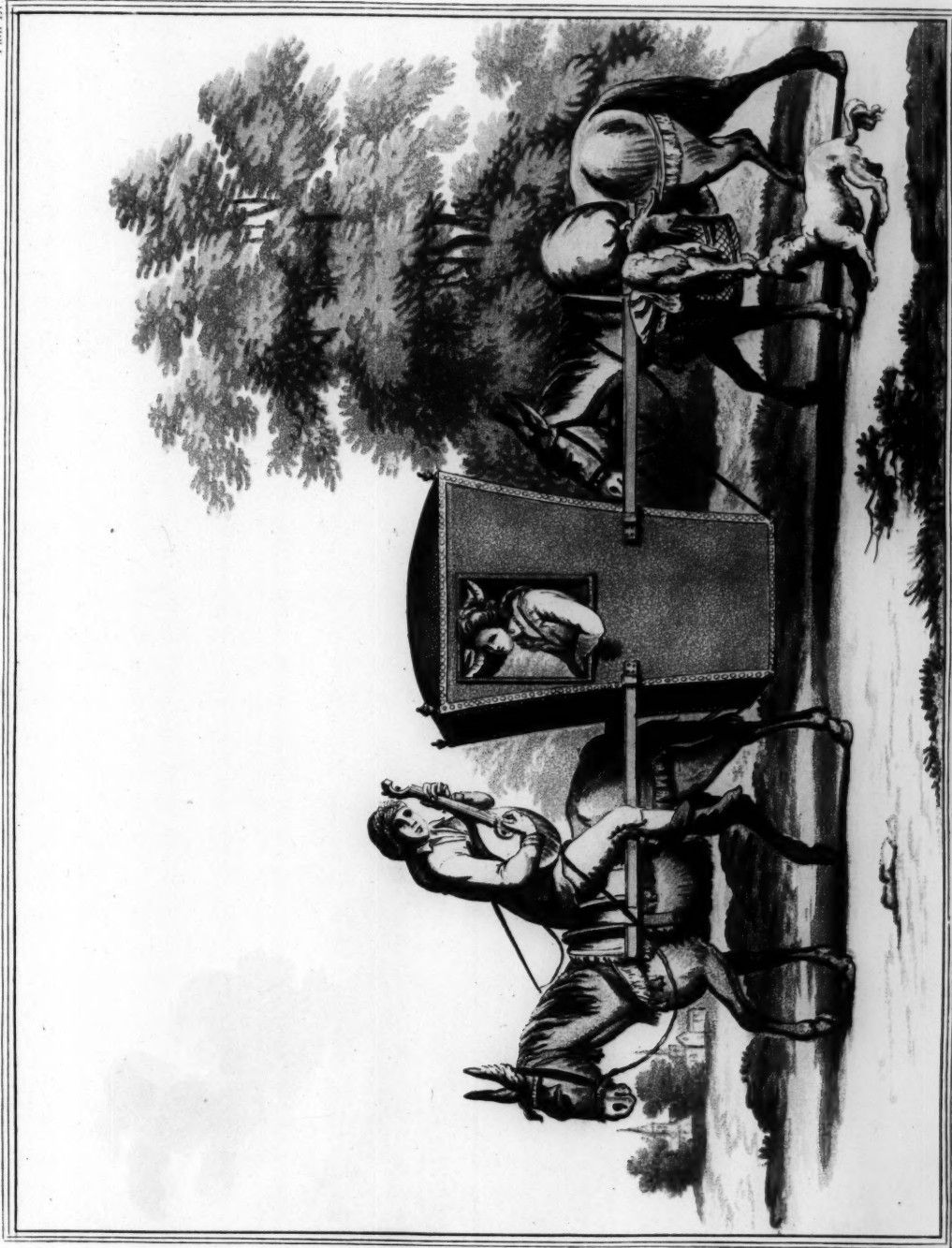
In Murphy's Travels in Portugal, page 160, may be seen an account of the manner of catching black cattle in Brazil, as exhibited by a native of the latter country at the circus of Lisbon in the year 1789. The singularity of the exhibition induced us to give the annexed view of it. Plate XIV.



Published by G. S. Davis, Aug. 15, 1897.

(A Portuguese Scene.)

Plate VIII.



London: Published by J. G. & J. S. 1817.

Travelling in a Gitter.



Plate X.

A Princess's Daughter riding to the Fair of Linn.

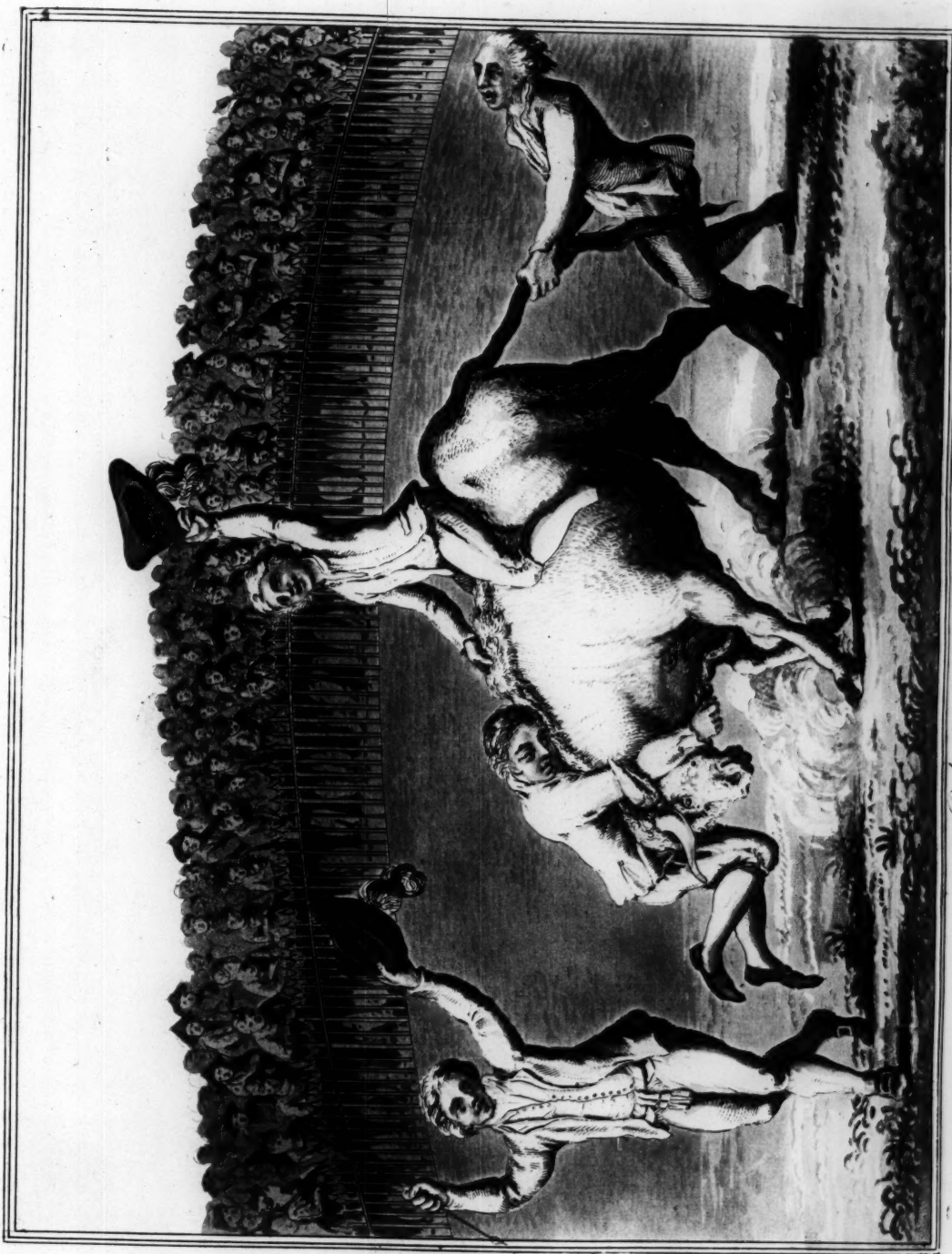
Engraved by G. S. Davies. Aug. 17, 1797.



Plate VI

A Currier from Lisbon to Oporto.

Published by Gaskell & Davis, No. 5, 59.



Polebrinos attacking a bull.

Published by G. & D. Davies, Aug. 17, 1897.

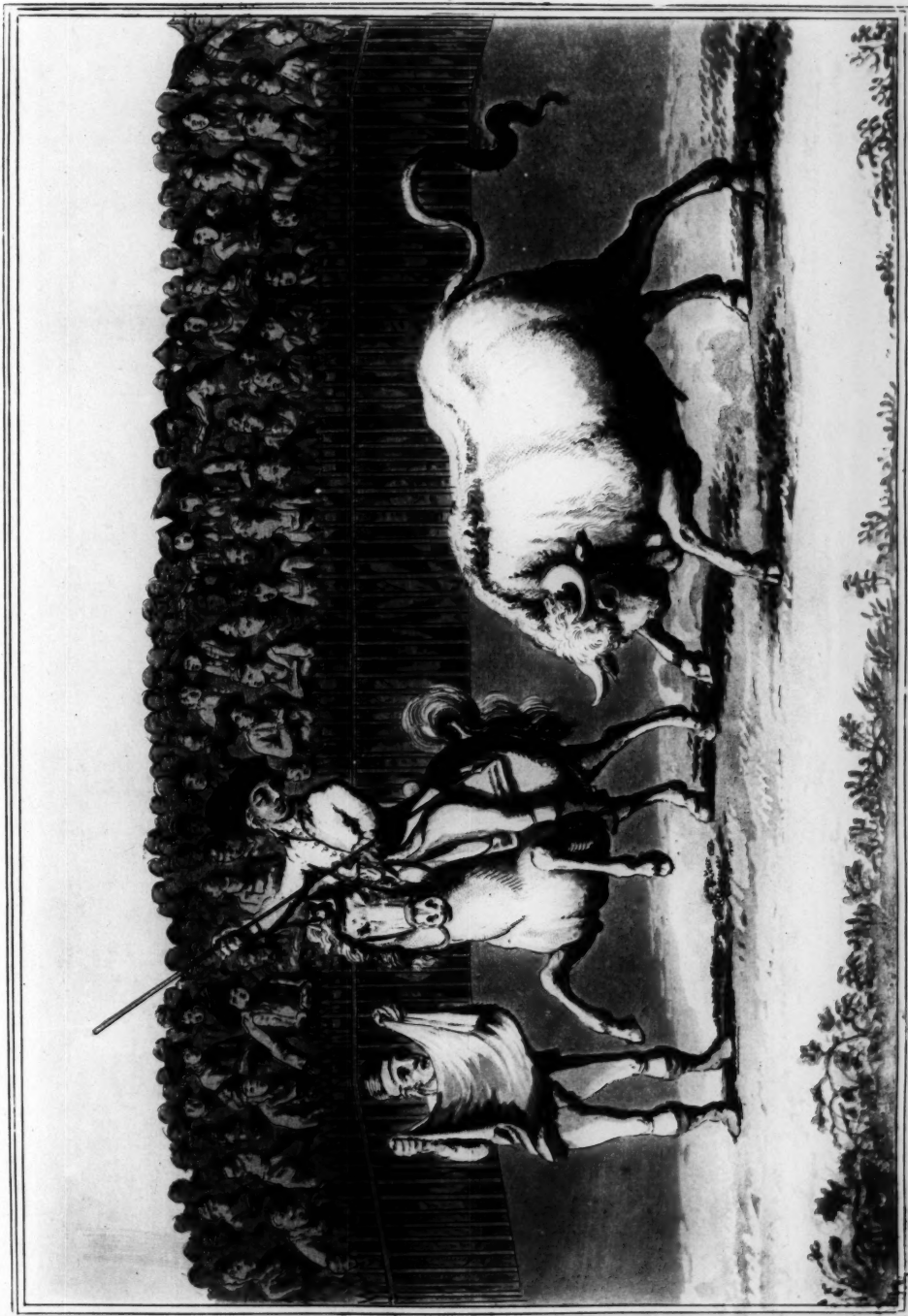
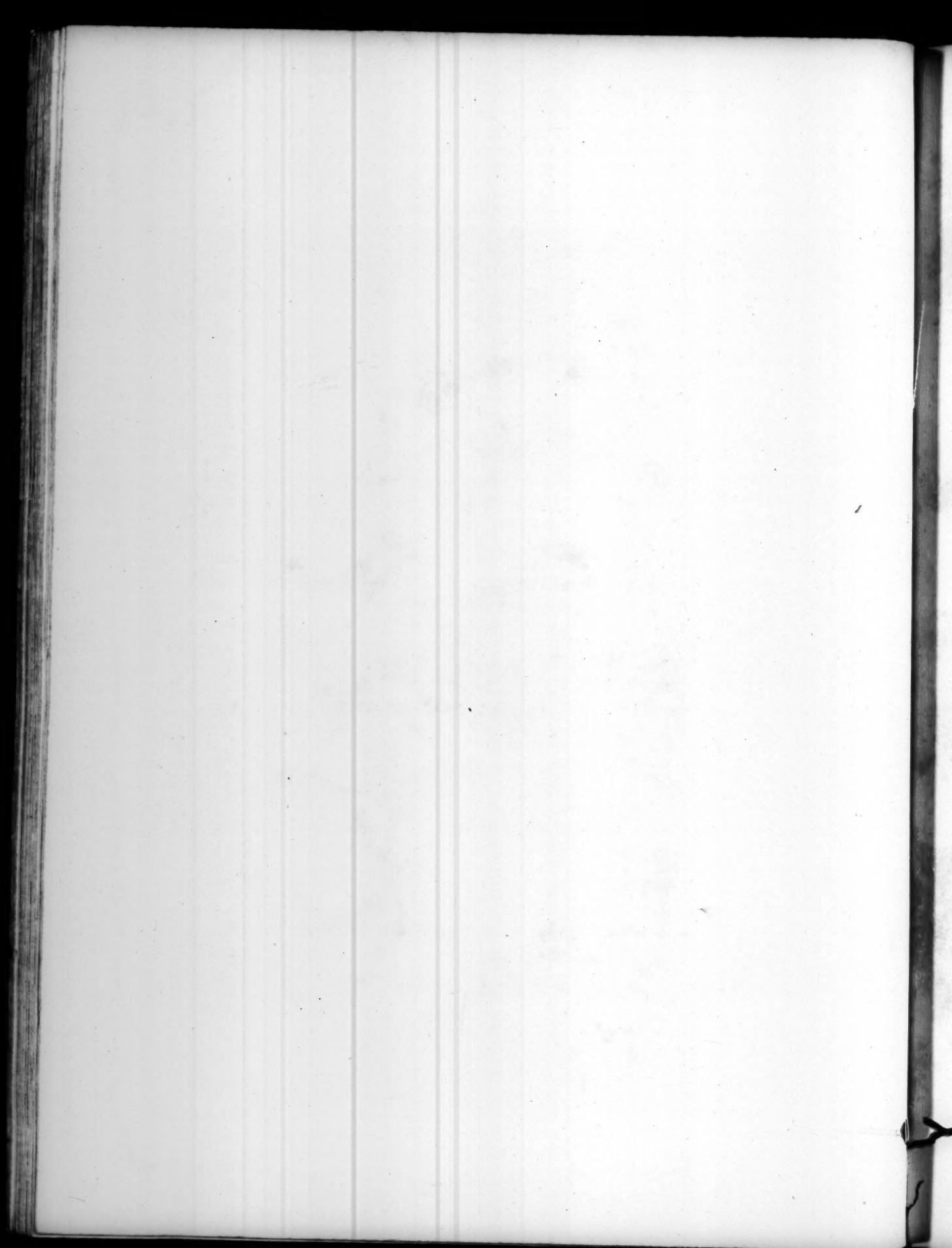


Plate XIII.

A Carder attacking a bull.

Published by G. B. & D. Davis, Jun. & Co., 1797.



C H A P. XXV.

Language.

THE Portuguese language is principally composed of the Latin, Greek, and Arabic languages. It scarcely retains a word of the different dialects that are supposed to have obtained in the kingdom anterior to the dominion of the Romans. When these people made themselves masters of Lusitania, pursuant to their usual policy, they appeared as zealous to propagate their language as their laws; for which purpose they ordained, that all contracts and stipulations not drawn up in the Latin tongue should be considered invalid. Thus, in course of time, their language became general throughout the continent of Hispania, Biscaya excepted, and was preserved there long after they had been expelled thence by the northern invaders.

At what time the Gothic alphabet, the invention of which is attributed to Bishop *Ulfilius*, was first introduced into Portugal, is not very certain; but it appears that the Latin tongue, from that period, sunk rapidly from its original purity. The corruption, however, ceased not here. At the beginning of the eighth century came the Arabians; and after subjugating the kingdom, grafted their idiom upon its Gothic Latinity.

Such was the heterogeneous dialect of Portugal when Count Henry, the founder of the monarchy, came thither. This Prince being a native of France, and his consort a Castilian by birth, their example, together with that of their numerous followers, consisting of persons of both nations, introduced, particularly at the seat of government, an idiom, partly French and partly Spanish. At length these different dialects were blended together; and, by the progressive improvement of many centuries, reduced into the form in which we now find the Portuguese language.

As the Latin tongue, of all others, was that which took deepest root in the kingdom, so it continues most predominant, and may be considered as the fabric and scheme of the whole. There are several poetical compositions, written in the fifteenth century, still extant; by which it appears that the authors affected to reduce it entirely to a dialect of the Latin. But the examples of more judicious writers have checked these innovations, and prescribed the proper bounds.

The Arabic words with which it is interspersed are much the same as those in the Spanish language, which, according to Joseph Scaliger, are sufficiently numerous to form an entire lexicon. *Tot puræ Arabicæ voces in Hispan. reperiuntur, ut ex illis justum lexicon confici possit.*

Vieyra has followed the current opinion, where he says, "the greatest part of these words are compounded with the article *al*, as in the word *almofada*, a cushion." But Father

de Soufa, in his late lexicon^a of Portuguese words, derived from the Arabic, shews the fallacy of the rule. It is certain, however, that many of the Portuguese words which begin in *al* or *xa*, or end in *z*, are borrowed from the Arabic.

The

^a This lexicon was published at Lisbon in the year 1789, by order of the Rbyal Academy of Sciences; it is intitled, *Lexicon Etymologico das palavras e nomes Portuguezes que tem origem Arabica*. The following extracts are given as a specimen of the work, to shew the affinity there is between the Portuguese derivatives and the Arabic primitives; both of which have a great similarity, in many instances, to the English:

Portuguese.	Arabic.	
<i>Açafrão.</i>	<i>Azzáfarán.</i>	Saffron.
<i>Açúcar.</i>	<i>Affocár.</i>	Sugar.
<i>Alambique.</i>	<i>Alambique.</i>	An alembick.
<i>Albafor.</i>	<i>Albachúr.</i>	An incense made of benzoin, lavender, strong vinegar, and the root of the galangal, mixed together.
<i>Alaçus.</i>	<i>Arqueffús.</i>	Liquorice, the water in which this root has been steeped, makes a pleasant beverage, which is drank by the Asiatics in summer.
<i>Alcachofra.</i>	<i>Alcharxufa.</i>	An artichoke.
<i>Alcoba.</i>	<i>Alcobba.</i>	An alcove.
<i>Alcorce.</i>	<i>Alcorce.</i>	A sweet-meat made of barley, flour, butter, and sugar, which is used by the Christians of the East at Christmas and Easter festivals.
<i>Algarva.</i>	<i>Algarb.</i>	The west.
<i>Algebra.</i>	<i>Algebára.</i>	Algebra—it also means the art of repairing or setting broken or dislocated bones.
<i>Algodão.</i>	<i>Alcoton.</i>	Cotton.
<i>Almanach.</i>	<i>Almana.</i>	An almanac (from <i>mana</i> , to calculate).
<i>Almazem.</i>	<i>Armazem.</i>	A magazine.
<i>Almicantarát.</i>	<i>Almocantarát.</i>	Almacanters, or circles drawn parallel to the horizon.
<i>Almifcar.</i>	<i>Almosco.</i>	Musk.
<i>Aloe.</i>	<i>Aluat.</i>	Aloe, a precious wood so called.
<i>Alquimia.</i>	<i>Alquimia.</i>	Alchymy.
<i>Alvara.</i>	<i>Alharát.</i>	A charter, or letter patent.
<i>Arratel.</i>	<i>Arratlé.</i>	A pound weight.
<i>Arroz.</i>	<i>Arroz.</i>	Rice.
<i>Azul.</i>	<i>Lazur.</i>	Azure.
<i>Balcam.</i>	<i>Balicana.</i>	A balcony.
<i>Balsamo.</i>	<i>Balsam.</i>	Balsam.
<i>Borax.</i>	<i>Borag.</i>	Borax.

Café.

Such was the heterogeneous dialect of Portugal when Count Henry, the founder of the monarchy, came thither. This Prince being a native of France, and his consort a Castilian by birth, their example, together with that of their numerous followers, consisting of persons of both nations, introduced, particularly at the seat of government, an idiom, partly French and partly Spanish. At length these different dialects were blended together; and, by the progressive improvement of many centuries, reduced into the form in which we now find the Portuguese language.

As the Latin tongue, of all others, was that which took deepest root in the kingdom, so it continues most predominant, and may be considered as the fabric and scheme of the whole. There are several poetical compositions, written in the fifteenth century, still extant; by which it appears that the authors affected to reduce it entirely to a dialect of the Latin. But the examples of more judicious writers have checked these innovations, and prescribed the proper bounds.

The Arabic words with which it is interspersed are much the same as those in the Spanish language, which, according to Joseph Scaliger, are sufficiently numerous to form an entire lexicon. *Tot puræ Arabicæ voces in Hispan. reperiuntur, ut ex illis justum lexicon confici possit.*

Vieyra has followed the current opinion, where he says, "the greatest part of these words are compounded with the article *al*, as in the word *almofada*, a cushion." But Father

de Soufa, in his late lexicon^a of Portuguese words, derived from the Arabic, shews the fallacy of the rule. It is certain, however, that many of the Portuguese words which begin in *al* or *xa*, or end in *z*, are borrowed from the Arabic.

The

^a This lexicon was published at Lisbon in the year 1789, by order of the Royal Academy of Sciences; it is intitled, *Lexicon Etymologico das palavras e nomes Portuguezes que tem origem Arabica*. The following extracts are given as a specimen of the work, to shew the affinity there is between the Portuguese derivatives and the Arabic primitives; both of which have a great similarity, in many instances, to the English:

Portuguese.	Arabic.	
<i>Açafrão.</i>	<i>Axxâfarân.</i>	Saffron.
<i>Açúcar.</i>	<i>Affoccar.</i>	Sugar.
<i>Alambique.</i>	<i>Alambique.</i>	An alembick.
<i>Albasfor.</i>	<i>Albachûr.</i>	An incense made of benzoin, lavender, strong vinegar, and the root of the galangal, mixed together.
<i>Alagus.</i>	<i>Arquesûs.</i>	Liquorice, the water in which this root has been steeped, makes a pleasant beverage, which is drank by the Asiatics in summer.
<i>Alcachofra.</i>	<i>Alcharxufa.</i>	An artichoke.
<i>Alcoba.</i>	<i>Alcobba.</i>	An alcove.
<i>Alcorce.</i>	<i>Alcorce.</i>	A sweet-meat made of barley, flour, butter, and sugar, which is used by the Christians of the East at Christmas and Easter festivals.
<i>Algarva.</i>	<i>Algarb.</i>	The west.
<i>Algebra.</i>	<i>Algebâra.</i>	Algebra—it also means the art of repairing or setting broken or dislocated bones.
<i>Algodão.</i>	<i>Alcoton.</i>	Cotton.
<i>Almanach.</i>	<i>Almana.</i>	An almanac (from <i>mana</i> , to calculate).
<i>Almazem.</i>	<i>Armazem.</i>	A magazine.
<i>Almificantar.</i>	<i>Almocantarat.</i>	Almacanters, or circles drawn parallel to the horizon.
<i>Almisfar.</i>	<i>Almosfo.</i>	Musk.
<i>Aloe.</i>	<i>Aluat.</i>	Aloe, a precious wood so called.
<i>Alquimia.</i>	<i>Alquimia.</i>	Alchemy.
<i>Alvara.</i>	<i>Albarât.</i>	A charter, or letter patent.
<i>Arratel.</i>	<i>Arratlé.</i>	A pound weight.
<i>Arroz.</i>	<i>Arroz.</i>	Rice.
<i>Azul.</i>	<i>Lazur.</i>	Azure.
<i>Balcam.</i>	<i>Balicana.</i>	A balcony.
<i>Balsamo.</i>	<i>Balsam.</i>	Balsam.
<i>Borax.</i>	<i>Borag.</i>	Borax.

Casfr.

The learned Father above mentioned observes, that there are a number of Persic words in the Portuguese, the introduction of which he attributes partly to the Goths, Huns, Vandals, and Suevi, who, proceeding from the East towards the

Portuguese.	Arabic.	
<i>Cafre.</i>	<i>Cafir.</i>	Caffer; in Arabic it means an impious man, subject to neither law nor religion.
<i>Candil.</i>	<i>Candil.</i>	A lamp, or candle.
<i>Carmin.</i>	<i>Carmin.</i>	Carminc.
<i>Chita.</i>	<i>Chit.</i>	Chintz.
<i>Cid.</i>	<i>Sid.</i>	Lord, or commander.
<i>Dervixe.</i>	<i>Darvix.</i>	A beggar, or hermit.
<i>Endivia.</i>	<i>Hondeba.</i>	Endive, a plant.
<i>Escarlate.</i>	<i>Scarlat.</i>	Scarlet.
<i>Espinagre.</i>	<i>Espanich.</i>	Spinage.
<i>Gibraltar.</i>	<i>Jabalharik.</i>	A fortress at the mouth of the Mediterranean; the name is composed of the Arabic words <i>jabal</i> a mountain, and <i>Tarik</i> the prænomèn of the Arabian general (<i>Tarik ben Zarcas</i>), who took Gibraltar at the beginning of the eighth century.
<i>Gota.</i>	[<i>Gut.</i> Persic.]	The gout. The Arabians call it <i>uajati el meluk</i> ; that is, the disease of kings.
<i>Guitarra.</i>	<i>Quitara.</i>	A guitar.
<i>Jalape.</i>	[<i>Golapa.</i> Persic.]	Jalap.
<i>Jarra.</i>	<i>Jarra.</i>	Jar, an earthen vessel.
<i>Jasamin.</i>	<i>Jasmin.</i>	Jasmine.
<i>Laca.</i>	<i>Lacca.</i>	Lake, a colour.
<i>Laranja.</i>	<i>Naranja.</i>	An orange.
<i>Laudano.</i>	<i>Ladano.</i>	Laudanum.
<i>Limaõ.</i>	[<i>Laimun.</i> Persic.]	A lemon.
<i>Morquexita.</i>	<i>Marcasat.</i>	Marcasite, a fossil.
<i>Mastica.</i>	<i>Mastica.</i>	Mastich.
<i>Mosti.</i>	<i>Mosti.</i>	A chief justice, or an expounder of the civil law.
<i>Mumia.</i>	<i>Mumia.</i>	An embalmed corpse. The doctors of the East dissolve the flesh, which they cut off the calves or some other fleshy part of mummies, in warm water, and give the solution to drink as a remedy for contusions.
<i>Musarabes.</i>	<i>Nusarab.</i>	A name given to the Christians who lived among the Arabs during their dominion in Spain, which means <i>half-Arabs</i> .
<i>Quintal.</i>	<i>Quentar.</i>	Quintal, a weight of 120 lbs.

Quirat.

the West, over-ran Europe; and partly to the commerce carried on by Portugal with those countries which retain vestiges of their dialect, as Germany, the Low Countries, England^b, &c. Some, he observes, might also have crept in through books of science, and others by means of the communication that was between Persia and Portugal in the reign of King Emanuel, who received several letters from Ismael the Sophia; copies of which are still preserved in the Royal Archives of Lisbon.

From the extensive commerce which the Portuguese, during two centuries, had carried on with India, it was almost im-

Portuguese.	Arabic.	
<i>Quirat.</i>	<i>Quirât.</i>	The seed of the carob bean—a weight of four grains of corn.
<i>Sabão.</i>	<i>Sabun.</i>	Soap. (Vieyra says, the word <i>sabun</i> has the same signification in the Arabic, Persic, Turkish, and Hindostan languages.)
<i>Salamandra.</i>	<i>Samandara.</i>	A salamander.
<i>Sergento.</i>	[<i>Sarjank.</i> Persic.]	Serjeant.
<i>Senna.</i>	<i>Senê.</i>	Senna, a plant that grows in Arabia Felix.
<i>Talco.</i>	<i>Talco.</i>	Talc.
<i>Xadrez.</i>	[<i>Xatrang.</i> Persic.]	The game of chess; very common in Persia, and all over the East. The word <i>xatrang</i> is derived from <i>xax</i> and <i>rangus</i> , (i. e.) six troubles. The names of the men, in the Persic language, are as follow: <i>Xab</i> , a king; <i>farzân</i> , a queen; <i>fil</i> , an elephant; <i>roch</i> , a stork; <i>faras</i> , a horse; <i>baidag</i> , a foldier. Its inventor was <i>Safah ben Daber</i> .
<i>Zigus Zigus.</i>	[<i>Zig Zig.</i> Persic.]	The jarring noise mad by a door in shutting or opening—zig zag.

^b In proof of his assertion, Father de Soufa says, that the following words are of Persic origin:

Persic.	English.	Persic.	English.	Persic.	English.
<i>Brodar,</i>	Brother.	<i>Band,</i>	Band.	<i>Cak,</i>	Cake.
<i>Doâbar,</i>	Daughter.	<i>Dar,</i>	Door.	<i>Garm,</i>	Warm.
<i>Madab,</i>	Maid.	<i>Aflach,</i>	Stag.	<i>Gud,</i>	Good.
<i>Tonder,</i>	Thunder.	<i>Zual,</i>	Coal.	<i>Barbar,</i>	Barber.
<i>Bad,</i>	Bad.	<i>Shakil,</i>	Shackle.	<i>Lab,</i>	Lip.
<i>Bobter,</i>	Better.	<i>Ladab,</i>	Lad.		
<i>Boftar,</i>	Bolster.	<i>Kub,</i>	Cup.		

possible

possible to guard against the influx of Asiatic words, many of which they have naturalized.

When a language, thus composed of a variety of dialects, is still left undefined, without an appellative or technical dictionary that can be depended on, and its orthography unfixed, subject "to the corruption of ignorance, and caprices of innovation," we must naturally expect a wide difference between the style of a modern writer and one of the last century. Indeed, no two writers, even of the present day, adopt the same mode of spelling; and hence arises one of the greatest difficulties in attaining a perfect knowledge of the language. No cultivated nation of Europe has produced worse lexicographers than Portugal.

Yet, with all its irregularity, it must be allowed to be copious and expressive; as may be inferred from the works of the venerable Quental, and of the Count de Ercira. For the satyric, few languages are better adapted, as it abounds with acute and laconic sentences and proverbs: And it has been long since acknowledged, what harmony what grace it is susceptible of, when flowing from the magic pens of such poets as Camoens and Baccelar.

Some elegancies it certainly possesses, and these of a peculiar kind; by the word *saudade*, for example, is emphatically expressed the tender affections of a parent or a lover; and by the word *magoa* is conveyed a forcible idea of the poignant anguish of the soul. In writing or speaking it there are very few abbreviations or elisions, it is pronounced slow and articulate, free from guttural sounds, nor do the words terminate, but very rarely, in asperous consonants.

C H A P. XXVI.

Genius and Learning.

UNTIL the time of Deniz, the sixth King of Portugal, the degrees of Doctor, Master, and Bachelor, were unknown in the kingdom. Nor did the youth receive any other instruction than the elements of the Latin tongue, and a tincture of philosophy; and for this they were indebted to the theologists of the cathedral churches. Such as went out of the country to study, obtained, on their return, the title of Scholars.

This truly illustrious Prince, notwithstanding his unremitting attention to the duties of the throne, and the happiness of his people, cultivated Poetry and *Belles Lettres*, and inspired his subjects with a love of learning. He is supposed to have been the first who introduced rhyme into the poetry of his country, by which he obtained the title of the Father of the Portuguese Muses. His first compositions were in imitation of the ancient *Provençal* poets or *Troubadours* of France. Portugal is also indebted to him for the first institution of public schools. He founded a college at Lisbon; and Coimbra, the principal university of the empire, owes its origin to him.

The view hereunto annexed, (plate XV.) of this venerable seat of learning, I am indebted for to a Portuguese gentleman.

It is situated in the province of Beira, and in the city of Coimbra, which is built upon an eminence on the north side of the delightful banks of the river Mondego.—At Evora is another university, founded in the year 1553.

At Mafra is a college, founded by Joseph I. in the year 1772. About the same time was founded, at Lisbon, a college for the education of the sons of the nobility, called *Collegio dos Nobres*. Here also is a military and marine academy, where young gentlemen are educated in the science of engineering and naval tactics.

Formerly there were several literary academies at Lisbon, as the *Instantaneos*, so called because the members recited verses, and made speeches, extemporally, the *Singulares*, the *Generosos*, the *Anonymos*, the *Applicados*, the *Estudiosos*, the *Ilustrados*, and others from which the public derived no benefit; and whose members often assembled for no other purpose than that of complimenting or satyrizing each other.

“Hitherto,” says a modern Academician, “the republic of letters, among us, resembled the greater part of political republics, being possessed of all the faults attendant on that form of government; a learned body, without a chief; a family of literary orphans, without a protector. The happy day at length arrived, when this republic was changed into a monarchy, without losing any part of its liberty.” John V. conceiving the utility of a learned society, similar to those of London and of Paris, instituted the Royal Academy of Portugal. The members held their first meeting on the 8th of December 1720.

This

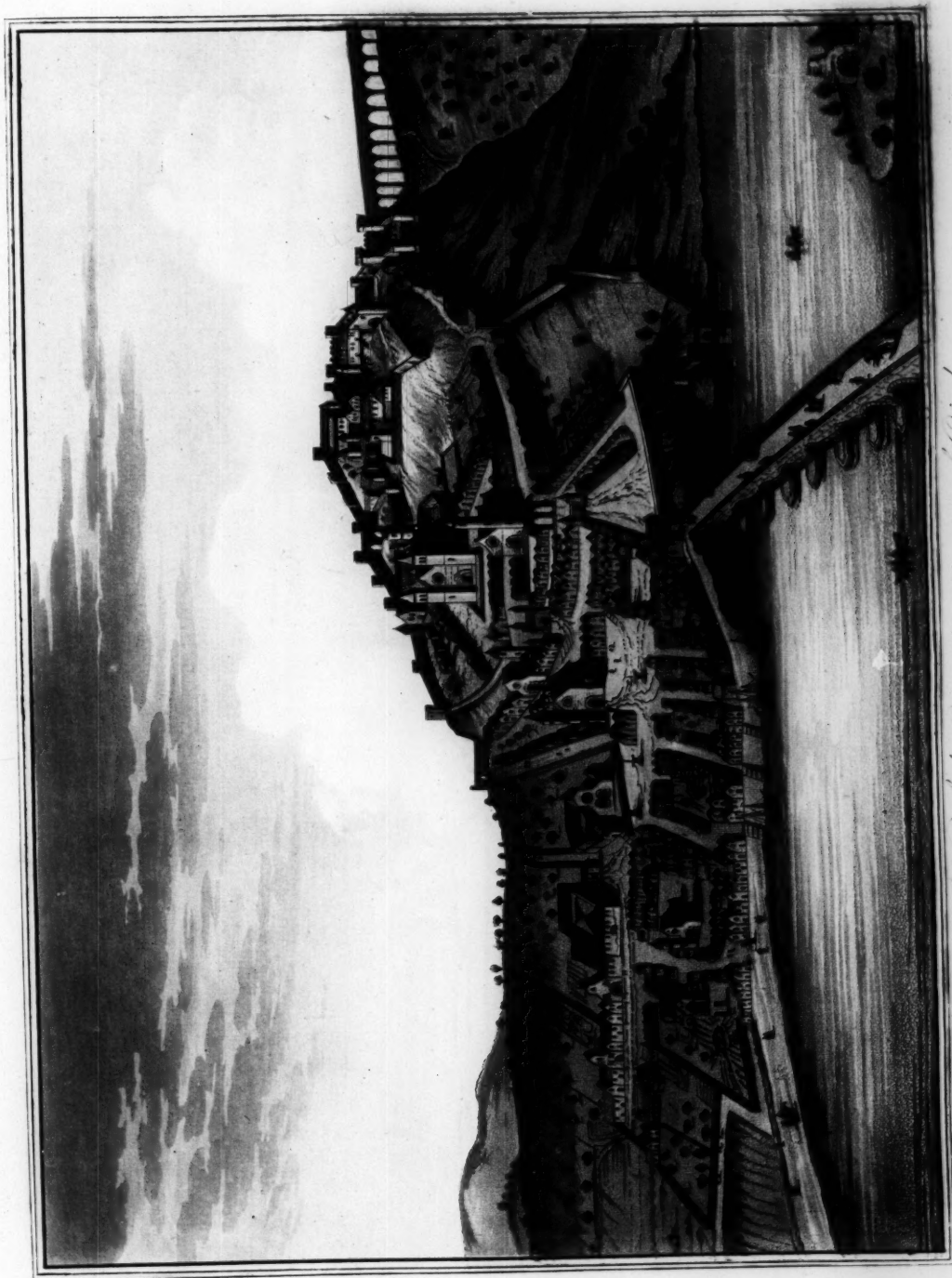


Plate XV.

A View of the City and University of Coimbra

Published by Gould & Davis, Aug. 27, 1897.



This learned body, at first, proposed only to make the ecclesiastical history of Portugal the object of their researches, upon the model of *Italie Sacree*, by Ugbelli; but they soon extended their inquiry to civil and political subjects, with a view to give a complete history of their country, free of the errors of antecedent writers.

The number of the academicians were limited to fifty; and no supernumeraries could be admitted without the King's permission. Each year, a director was chosen by ballot from among five members elected for that purpose. Of the other four, three were censors, and one a president, in his turn. The office of secretary was perpetual, he presided in case of the absence of the directors and censor, and named a secretary *pro tempore*.

The director had the proposing of subjects for deliberation, and the collecting of the suffrages. He had also the power of imposing silence, and of calling any member to order who spoke not to the subject-question. Of whatever passed in the assembly, he was obliged to render an account to the King, to receive his orders, and communicate the same to the society.

Every week, the director, the censor, and the secretary held a private meeting, to examine the papers laid on their table. The Academy met once a fortnight; and no member was allowed to absent himself more than two months without permission; no priority of rank was observed in their sittings. The number of honorary members were limited to seventeen. No stranger, of whatever rank, could be admitted without

previous invitation, unless he had something urgent to communicate. Each year, they celebrated the birth-days of the King and Queen with odes and elogies. Their seal bore the Royal arms; and these words, *Sigillum Regiæ Academicæ Historiæ Lusitanæ*. Their device was Truth typified according to the ancient manner, with this motto, *Restituet omnia*.

The present Royal Academy of Lisbon owes its origin to the reigning Sovereign. Its members, much to their honour, have steered a course very different from that of their predecessors, so that the institution may be considered as the æra of the return of useful knowledge in Portugal. No paper is admitted among their proceedings, that is not of real utility to the community. Matters relating to agriculture, arts, commerce, and œconomy in general, are the chief objects of their inquiry; they have already published several volumes on these heads, to which the public are certainly much indebted; posterity will receive their labours with gratitude, and thank the Royal and illustrious patrons of so universally interesting an institution.

Through the patronage and encouragement of this learned body, Portuguese literature begins to be better known; a purer taste, and more solid criticism, begin to draw science and letters from the chaos in which they have been concealed. The only epic poem hitherto generally known, is the *Luciad* of Camoens; they reckon, however, six others. *ULYSSIS*, by *Perreira de Castro*; *THE FOUNDATION OF LISBON*, by *Antonio de Sousa*; *PORTUGAL RECONQUERED*, by the *Marquis de Menezes*; *MACCABEUS*, by *Miguel Sylveira*; *ALPHONSO*, by *Vasconcelhos*; and *HENRIADE*, by *Count de Ericeira*.

By

By their successes in pastoral poetry, *Saá da Miranda* and *Rodrigo Lobo* were named, one the *Theocritus*, the other the *Virgil*, of Portugal. The satyrs, epigrams, odes, stanzas, and poems fill a great number of volumes; among which, the first rank is claimed by the Fable of Polyphemus, and the Metamorphoses of Ovid, translated into burlesque verse by *Antonio dos Reis*. The works of *Ferreira da Lacerda*, a woman well versed in rhetoric, philosophy, and mathematics, are also held in high esteem; they consist of a collection of miscellaneous pieces, a volume of comedies, and a poem on the Revolution of Portugal.

For solidity, purity of taste and style as Historians, a preference is given to *Joaõ de Barros*, *Fr. Luiz de Sousa*, *Fr. Bernardo de Brito*, *Vieira*, *Osorio*, Bishop of Sylves, *Duarte Ribeiro de Macedo*, the venerable *Bartholomeu do Quental*, and Count de *Ericeira*.—As Poets, *Camoens*, *Diogo Bernardes*, *Antonio Barboza*, *Bacelar*, and *Gabriel Pereira*.—As Dramatic Writers, *Vicente Antonio Josephus*; whose plays are published in four volumes: and *Nicola Luis*, called the Portuguese *Plautus*.

These are the principal writers who have flourished among the Portuguese; and notwithstanding most of them have borrowed, or have been honored with the name of some classical writer, yet we apprehend that, except *Camoens*, *De Barros*, *Osorio*, and *Vieira*, they hold but a very subordinate rank among the historians, poets, and dramatic writers of antiquity, or even of England or of France.

Except in the reign of John V. they do not appear to have been very ambitious of obtaining a distinguished rank in the republic of letters. The wars and enterprises in which they were

were constantly engaged till the end of King Sebastian's reign, seem to have diverted their attention from literary pursuits; and yet it is remarkable, that the best poets, historians, and geographers they have to boast of, have flourished in the most active periods of their monarchy.

The species of writing in which, perhaps, they succeed best is romance: their fondness for the marvellous, their quick and fertile talents, and aversion from profound and laborious studies, are peculiarly favourable to subjects of this kind.

Among the fine arts, music, I believe, is the only one in which the Portuguese have excelled. The compositions of John IV. of *Cordoba*, and *Soares*, are well known in different parts of Europe.

But of all other branches of learning, there is not one less studied or understood at present in Portugal than mathematics; nor one that was formerly better understood. In the most brilliant æra of the monarchy, it formed the principal study of most of its great men: witness Prince Henry, King John I. and II., King Emanuel, Vasco de Gama, Magellan, De Barros, Pedro Nunes; the last was the best of the Portuguese mathematicians; he flourished at the beginning of the sixteenth century, and was the first professor the university of Coimbra had in this science; he was preceptor to the brave Don John de Castro, to the Infante Don Luis, brother to John III. and to King Sebastian. Even the Portuguese churchmen, in those days, as if calling to mind the sage maxim of Ticho Brahe, thought "midnight oil and mathematics necessary to make a sound
"divine."

At Coimbra they have an Observatory, and at Lisbon another; but there is neither an astronomer nor an instrument in either, and I am assured that there is not a practical astronomer in the kingdom. Indeed, the Portuguese, like the Spaniards, seem to have been deterred from the study of this sublime science, by the fate of Alfonso X. of Castile; who, according to Mariana, lost the earth by studying the heavens.

Of late years, they have been chiefly employed on subjects of natural history, and in making translations from the French. In the former they have two eminent men, namely *Vandelli*, (an Italian by birth,) the author of several valuable essays on natural history and œconomy; and *Loureiro*, the author of *Flora Cochinchinensis*, in 2 vols. quarto: this great ornament of his country is now enjoying the fruits of a long and virtuous life, in a better world; he died at Lisbon about three years ago, universally lamented and esteemed.

C H A P. XXVII.

Anecdotes of distinguished Portuguese Characters.

FRANCISCO DE MACEDO,

ONE of the most fertile writers of the seventeenth century, was born at Coimbra in 1596. In the year 1610, he entered into the society of the Jesuits; which he left a few years after for the order of Saint Francis. He wrote several books in defence of the Duke de Braganza's right to the crown of Portugal; and accompanied that Prince's ambassadors into France and England. He was called to Rome, and appointed professor of polemical divinity, in the college *de Propaganda fide*: afterwards of ecclesiastical history, in the college *Della Sapienza*, and censor of the Holy office.

If what *Leti*, in his *Italia Regnante*, relates of him be true, he must have been a very extraordinary man: We are told he spoke two-and-twenty languages; was poet, orator, historian, philosopher, chronologist, divine: no Portuguese writer ever before obtained so great a reputation. He delivered sixty Latin discourses, fifty-three eulogies, and thirty-two funeral orations. There are extant of his writing, forty-eight poems, one hundred and twenty-three eulogies, one hundred and fifty epitaphs, two hundred and twelve epistles dedicatory, and more than two thousand epigrams. He was particularly distinguished

tinguished in France by his verses on the Equestrian statue of Lewis XIII. the tragedy of Jacob, and the tragi-comedy of Orpheus; both represented before Lewis XIV. when an infant. It was observed of these dramatic pieces, that both could not help being pleased with them, the blind on hearing them read, and the deaf on seeing them performed.

We cannot find a greater instance of a rich treasure of knowledge and presence of mind, than *Father Macedo* gave during three days that he maintained a thesis upon every subject, in the presence of the proctor of St. Mark, many of the senators and nobles of Venice, and a great number of foreigners, whom fame had drawn thither. The doctors and masters of all the orders interrogated and tried him with innumerable questions and arguments, which he answered to their wishes, as if every thing had been premeditated.

During his residence at Rome, in the year 1658, he not only explained thesis and made replies in every branch of knowledge, for three days together, in the church of St. Augustin, but made eloquent and well-turned orations, off-hand, on every subject proposed to him. "It is surprising," says Bayle, "that with so much learning and memory he grew grey "under the cowl, and was not promoted to a bishopric." He died at Padua, in 1681, at the age of 88.

In the convent of *Ara-Cæli* in Rome, *Father Angelo Farulfo* placed a marble bust of *Macedo*, on the pedestal of which is the following inscription:

A GENERAL VIEW OF THE

P. M. S.

*Viro omniscio,***P. Fr. FRANCISCO A. S. AUGUSTINO MACEDO,***Patriâ Lusitano, Veneto Civi**Minor. Observ. Prov. Portug. Lector. Jubil.**In Patavina Acad. Ethicæ Professori,**Regis Lusit. Joannis IV. Chronol. Latino,**S. Officii Rom. Qualific.**In Colleg. Propag. Fidei Controv. Lector.**In Rom. Sap. Histor. Ecclesiast. Mag.**Poetæ ex tempore celeberrimo,**Pluribus in Catholic. & litterar. Reipubl.**Obsequium laboribus claro,**Encyclopæd. non paucis speciminibus,**Ac certaminibus illustri,**Adversæ fortunæ ictibus intrepido,**Ingenio acri, infallibili memoria,**LXX Voluminum patri,**Die 1 Maii 1681 ætat. suæ ann. 88**Paduæ ad Superos profecto***Fr. MICHAEL ANGELUS FAROLFUS de Candia***Sacri Palat. Apostolic. Prædicat.**Cism. Fam. Min. Obs. & Ref. Discr. perp.**Grati discipulatus M. P. C.**Anno Domini 1691.*

Don

DON FRANCISCO MANOEL DE MELLO,

A native of Lisbon, held a distinguished rank in the Portuguese army for many years, and visited various parts of Europe; yet amidst his active employments he cultivated letters, with great assiduity, to an advanced age. He instituted an academy at Lisbon called the *Singulares*. The members met every Sunday evening at his house. In this assembly, consisting of all the wits and eccentric literary characters of the nation, *Mello* was distinguished for the quickness and fertility of his genius, and the facility with which he wrote upon every subject with propriety and elegance. In speaking of his first literary work he observes, "The *Political Tactics* of *Don Francisco de Mello*," which was the first book he published, "was very small for so great a subject; to this however he "may apply the words of a modern preacher, who, to the "astonishment of his hearers, stopped short in his sermon, "*Brethren, said he, be not surprised, I have told you all I know.*" *Mello* died at Lisbon in the year 1660. We here present a catalogue of his works.

1. Political Tactics. 2. An Account of the War of Catalonia. 3. Political Discourses. 4. *Mayor Pequeno*. 5. The Phoenix of Africa. 6. Augustin, the Saint. 7. The Three Muses. 8. The Pantheon. 9. Advice to married People. 10. Mathematical Harmony. 11. Ancient and Modern Hypothesis. 12. The Labyrinth of Fortune; a Comedy. 13. The Secret; a Comedy. 14. The Satyrist in Love; a Comedy. 15. The Impossible; a Tragedy. 16. The Ungenerous Gallant; a Novel. 17. Cintra; a Novel. 18. The Busy Body; a Farce. 19. D. Establob; an Interlude. 20. The Gentleman Apprentice; a

Farce. 21. The House of Fame; a Panegyric. 22. Portuguese Epistles, in six hundred Letters. 23. The Three Portuguese Muses. 24. The Three last Castilian Muses. 25. The Cabalistic Art. 26. The Symbolic Art; treating of Religious, Military, and Political Insignia. 27. The Art of writing Letters. 28. The Sacred Dictator. 29. A Treatise on Morality. 30. Daniel the Christian. 31. Alexander and Tobias. 32. The Philosophical Parliament. 33. The Picture of Truth. 34. The History of Human Life; imperfect. 35. Conjectures concerning the Wonders of Nature. 36. Theodosius the Great, second Duke of Bragança. 37. The Cæsar of both Worlds. 38. The Portuguese Tacitus. 39. Genealogy of the Kings of Portugal. 40. The Golden Book. 41. Apologies for Idleness. 42. A Compendium of Expedients. 43. A Treatise on true Friendship. 44. Historical Relations of the Lusitanians in America. 45. Observations on the Alterations of Evora. 46. The Discovery of the Island of Madeira. 47. An Account of the Wreck of the Portuguese Armada. 48. The Victory of the Town of Canal. 49. The Asiatic Embassadors. 50. The Military Parliament. 51. Manifestos on Royal Assassination. 52. Of the first Discoveries of the Fleet belonging to the Commercial Company. 53. On the Re-conquest of Pernambuco. 54. The Confederates recompensed. 55. Moral Dialogues of Speaking Watches. 56. The Avaricious Counting-house. 57. The Visitant of the Fountain. 58. The Fair of Punsters. 59. The Hospital of Literature; which the author esteemed the best of all his works.

BERNARDINO RIBEIRO.

Was descended of an ancient and honourable family of the town of Torraon in Portugal. He was educated at the court
of

of King Emanuel, where, at an early age, he was received, agreeably to the custom of that time, as a pensioner, in consideration of the services of his ancestors. From his writings he appears to have possessed great warmth of imagination, and a true poetic though neglected genius. A work of his, intitled *Desideratum*, was greatly admired by Camoens in particular, for its variety of singular metaphors and rapid succession of original sentiments.

Dona Beatrix, second daughter of King Emanuel, was charmed with his verses; and seeming to favour the poet for his wit, he became enamoured of her beauty, insomuch that when this Princess was married to Charles Duke of Savoy, *Ribeiro* was seized with a deep melancholy, and retired, in hermitical solitude, to the most bleak and solitary part of Cintra, near Lisbon. After some time, however, his friends hoping to relieve his dejected mind, prevailed on him to travel; he accordingly set out on a pilgrimage to Rome: on his return from thence he passed through Savoy, and there beheld the lovely object of his pain, whom he accosted in a suppliant manner, and entreated for charity.

The Duchess immediately recognized him, and seemed much affected at the wretchedness of his appearance; she presented him with a piece of gold, exhorting him at the same time to return to his friends. Next morning a messenger was dispatched to *Ribeiro*, ordering him to quit the territory of Savoy without delay. Shortly after he returned to Lisbon, and ended his life with his pilgrimage.

AUGUSTIN

AUGUSTIN BARBOSA,

A native of Guimaraens in Portugal, was reared to the profession of the civil law; he afterwards studied the canon law, and entered into holy orders at Rome, where he passed a great part of his life. John Victor Rossi, who under the name of *Janus Nicius Erythraeus* wrote the eulogies of the learned men of his time, says, that *Barbosa* lived in the greatest misery at Rome, enjoying but one repast in the four-and-twenty hours. In this state he wrote several books; and as he had no library of his own, he spent the day at the booksellers' shops taking extracts, and composed by night. His principal work is intitled *Officio Episcopi*; of which the same Victor Rossi relates a curious anecdote. *Barbosa* having sent his servant one day to market, he brought home a small trout for his dinner, wrapped up in a leaf of manuscript, which the master, with that curiosity natural to men of letters, cast his eye on, and was agreeably surprised to find great ingenuity displayed in it on a curious point of canon law. He ran immediately to the fishmonger, in whose possession he found a thick manuscript volume from which the leaf was torn; he purchased it, brought it home, and after making some alterations, published it as his own. In 1632 he passed to Madrid, and there lived in his usual state of indigence. His learning and piety at length recommended him to Philip IV. who preferred him to the bishopric of Ugento in Otranta, where he died, much regretted by his flock, in the year 1649.

Don

DON SEBASTIEN DA ROCHA PITTA.

The history of Brazil, from the time of its discovery by Cabral, in the year 1500, down to 1724, was written in the reign of John V. by a member of the Royal Academy of Lisbon of the above name. It begins thus: "Of all other parts
" of the New World, unknown during so many centuries,
" calumniated by so many learned men, this World, which
" nor Hannon in all his voyages, nor Hercules the Libyan
" with his columns, nor Hercules the Thebain by his exploits,
" could ever reach, the most considerable portion is Brazil:
" immense region, happy, happy land; whose plains are
" covered with fruit, whose bowels teem with treasure; whose
" mountains are overspread with aromatics, whose trees yield
" the most exquisite balm, whose seas abound with the most
" precious amber; a region where every field, every mine,
" repays the labourer's toil with the most delicious viands and
" purest gold; admirable country of treasure inexhaustible,
" how miraculously hath Nature lavished every valuable pro-
" duction on thee, for the happiness of our monarch and the
" good of the world!"

Having penciled out a rapid sketch of the history of Portugal, and the state of the kingdom at the close of the fifteenth century, he thus continues his narrative: "Already had the
" sun, according to the most exact chronology, five thousand
" five hundred and fifty-two times crossed the Zodiac, when,
" in the year one thousand five hundred of our salvation, Peter
" Alvares Cabral, being cast by a tempest on an unknown
" coast, made the first discovery of Brazil."

Although the Portuguese at first were delighted with the play of words, the forced comparisons, and Oriental hyperboles which emblazon the above curious history, yet when their taste for letters was meliorated by succeeding writers, their admiration of the meretricious style of *Rocha Pitta* sunk into contempt.

Father RAPHAEL BLUTEAU.

Although Father *Bluteau* was a native of France, it may not be improper to introduce him among the distinguished characters of Portugal, as he spent a great portion of his life in that country. His principal literary work is a Portuguese and Latin Lexicon, published in eight thick volumes *in quarto*.

That the only dictionary hitherto worth naming, in the Portuguese language, should have been written by a foreigner, is not a little remarkable. There are also published, in two volumes, *in folio*, a collection of papers recited by him to the Royal Academy of Lisbon, bearing this title, *Profas Portuguezes*, printed at Lisbon in the years MDCCXXVIX and MDCCXXVIII. Among this curious farrago we find two papers not unworthy of a club of punsters, viz. *Profas Instruſtiva Jococeira*, and *Profas Enigmatica Intepretativa*. In another, intituled *Profas Gratulatorias*, he celebrates the Infanta Catherine, consort of our Charles II. with a tiffue of romantic praises which appear to have been copied from some Asiatic legend.

As a lexicographer, *Bluteau*, however, was certainly entitled to praise; he had a pretty general knowledge of languages, and a facility in writing prose and verse in Latin,
French,

French, and Spanish. Yet, with all these advantages, he had a Gothic taste; but extremely well adapted to the genius of the Portuguese of that age.

In the beginning of his dictionary he observes, that writers in general give but one preface to a book, as if there were but one class of readers in the world. Disdaining to follow this antiquated rule, he has given ten prefaces, or rather advertisements, to that work; addressed to the benevolent reader, the malevolent reader, the impatient reader, the Portuguese reader, the foreign reader, the learned reader, the ignorant reader, the undiscerning reader, the impertinent reader, the futile, and unpleasant reader.

A reader, indeed, without incurring the censure of impertinence, may be allowed to smile, with his reverence's permission, at that barbarous phalanx of epithets which the frontispiece of his dictionary exhibits in alphabetic order, thus:

VOCABULAIRE *Aulique, Architectonique—Bellique, Brasilique—Comique, Chimique—Dogmatique, Dendrologique—Ecclesiastique, Economique—Floriferique, Fructiferique—Geographique, Gnomonique—Homonimique, Hierologique—Ichtyologique, Isagogique—Laconique, Lithologique—Meteorologique—Neoterique—Orthographique, Ornithologique—Poetique, Philologique—Quidditativique—Rustique—Symbolique, Syllabique—Theologique, Therapeutique, Technologique—Uranologique—Zenophonique, Zoologique.*

DON JOHN DE BARROS.

Among the historians and geographers of Portugal, *Don John de Barros* holds the first rank; the celebrated *Decads of Asia*

were written by him; a work much admired for perspicuity and solidity. Pope Pius IV. in testimony of his esteem for the author, placed a statue of him in the Vatican, near that of Ptolemy. The Venetians have likewise honoured his memory with a statue in the Mausoleum of the illustrious characters of the republic. He died in 1570. On his monument is an inscription nearly similar to that on the tomb of Livy in Padua.

Don JOHN RODRIGUES DE SA' DE MENEZES.

Don John de Menezes, a scholar, a soldier, and a statesman, was high in authority under five successive kings, namely, Alphonso V. John II. Emanuel, John III. and Sebastian; each of whom he served with fidelity and honour. Among his literary works is a collection of poems on the genealogy of the principal families of Portugal; a work which is said to have had the effect of introducing a taste for letters among the rude and untaught nobility of his country.

When King Sebastian was about to embark in that fatal expedition to Africa in which he was slain, *Menezes* was one of those provident counsellors who strongly remonstrated on the inexpediency of such a rash and impolitic measure; among other arguments he observed, in an assembly consisting of the King and principal men of the nation, that if his Majesty persisted in his resolution, the Portuguese monarchy must inevitably expire in Africa; and therefore he would advise, among other equipments, to carry thither a *bier* and a *shroud*, in order to give the nation a decent interment in that unhallowed land.

"I once

"I once thought you a brave man," replied the boyish King,
"but age has chilled your blood and degenerated you into a
"coward. How old art thou, *Cavalier de Menezes*?"

"In your Majesty's council," rejoined the old veteran, in a
firm but respectful tone, "I am upwards of fivescore years;
"but in the field of battle, where I am determined to fight
"under your banners till the last, your Majesty will scarcely
"think me thirty."

Menezes died in the year 1579, at the beginning of Cardinal
Henry's reign, at the age of 115, having seen six different
crown-heads on the throne of Portugal.

GARCIA DE ORTA.

As a physician and naturalist, *Garcia de Orta* was considered
one of the ablest of the sixteenth century. Having obtained
the highest academic honours in the universities of Alcala and
Salamanca, he returned to Portugal, his native country, and
practised medicine with uncommon success at Lisbon; he also
read several courses of medical lectures to the students of that
city. A great portion of his life was devoted to the study of
natural history, particularly that part of it which relates to
the nature and healing properties of plants; for this purpose
he visited India, and spent thirty years in the examination of
plants and shrubs; by which he is said to have detected and
corrected many errors in the writings of ancient and modern
naturalists. The result of his inquiries on this important sub-
ject was printed and published at Goa in India, in the year

1563; since which they have been translated into different European languages.

EMANUEL CORDOSO.

In the theory and practice of music, *Emanuel Cordoso* stood unrivalled in Portugal. After he entered into holy orders he never performed on any instrument in public but the organ. Philip IV. of Spain had a particular esteem for him; and John IV. of Portugal had often honoured his cell in the Carmelite convent at Lisbon with his company, to hear him play on the violin, and to converse with him on the subject of his art. The latter Prince had his library ornamented with the portraits of the most eminent musicians; and to prove how highly he rated the talents of *Cordoso*, he had his portrait placed at the head of the collection. Of his composition there are extant five volumes of music. His most celebrated production is the hymn-piece which he set to music by order of Philip IV. upon the words *Philippus Quartus*. He lived to an advanced age; cultivating to the end the theory and practice of his favourite art; and drew his last breath chanting *Te Deum laudamus*.

King JOHN IV.

This Sovereign is considered by the Portuguese as one of the best musicians of his age. His compositions, which are published under a fictitious name, are well known abroad; particularly in Italy and Germany. He spared no expence in collecting the works of all the great professors of this art. Every day, after dinner, he devoted an hour to music. In the theoretic part he shewed a profound knowledge, in a treatise
he

He wrote in defence of modern music, in opposition to Bishop *Cyrillo Franco*, wherein he attempts to prove that the ancient music had not the power to move the passions equal to the modern; and says, "if it do not always produce effects equal to those ascribed to the ancient, the fault must not be attributed to the performer but to the composer." This treatise is dedicated to a famous violin-player of Lisbon, named *Laurenço Rebello*; the only instance perhaps on record of a king dedicating a book to a fidler.

ANDRÉ DE ESCOBAR.

One of the most excentric musical characters that Portugal has ever produced was *André de Escobar*. He seldom resided long in any one place, but wandered about in company with some itinerant bard, paying off the score of hospitality in sweet notes. He was appointed first musician of the Cathedral of Evora; and afterwards he held the same appointment in the Cathedral of Coimbra. When he played in public the first professors of the art used to flock to hear him, and express their astonishment at the masterly manner in which he played the most difficult compositions; for they imagined it was impossible to produce such delightful harmony from an instrument heretofore thought incapable of arresting the attention of a polite audience, namely, the *bag-pipes*. He visited India, where he spent several years; and was admired by many of the native princes for his melodious tones. There is extant a treatise of his on the art of playing on the *bag-pipes*.

FERNANDES

FERNANDES DE MENDOZA.

In an obscure village of the province of Beira, there lived, in the reign of John II. a friar named *Fernandes*; a man greatly beloved for his piety and simplicity of manners, which, with an extensive knowledge of the canon law, made his name known at court, though he never had the honour to pay his respects there. He was far advanced in years, when he received a letter from the prime minister, congratulating him on his preferment to a vacant bishopric, which his Majesty had named him to fill. *Fernandes*, though extremely indigent, expressed the greatest uneasiness at this unexpected honour, or rather burden as he considered it; and with all due sense of gratitude exhorted his Majesty, in the most supplicant language, to make some other choice. His letter concludes with these words: "I am unable, Sire, to perform the important rites of that sacred office, being an entire stranger to the relative duties of the pastor and the flock. From my youth I have been the inhabitant of a cloister, and to be drawn from thence and interrupted in my meditation in the decline of life and abilities, when my feeble state demands repose, will make me the most miserable of mortals; therefore I beseech your Majesty, in the name of all that is sacred, to permit an infirm old man to die in peace in his humble cell." The King, after repeated solicitations, at length acceded to his prayers.

The relatives of the friar, however, were much grieved at his refusing the proffered dignity; alleging that he had
frustrated

frustrated their hopes of having a tomb in their parish-church on which posterity might read, *Here lies the Most Reverend Father in God the Bishop of — of the family of the Mendozas.*—In place of that inscription, said *Fernandes*, let the following be put on my tomb, and it will not dishonour your family: *Here lies poor Friar Mendoza, who refused a mitre.*

LUIS DE CAMOENS.

Different towns of Portugal contend for the honour of giving birth to this celebrated bard. It is generally supposed, however, that Lisbon has the best claim to that distinction. His father, Simon vaz de Camoens, was commander of a trading vessel, in which he was cast away on the coast of Goa in India, and there lost, with his life, the greatest part of his fortune. Camoens, who was very young at this time, was educated under his mother, and sent at a proper age to the university of Coimbra. Of his acquirements in this venerable seat of learning, the knowledge displayed throughout his works in every branch of ancient literature forms the best comment.

After leaving the university he resided some years at Lisbon. His vivacity of disposition and polished manners, added to a handsome person, soon gained him a large circle of acquaintance of the first class. At this time it was customary with the Portuguese youth to perform serenades at the windows of their mistresses. Camoens, in one of these nocturnal amours, happened to be detected in paying his addresses to a lady of high rank, which gave such offence to her relatives, that he received an order from court next morning to retire

from Lisbon; an event which proved the source of all his succeeding misfortune.

Thus banished, he sought an asylum among his mother's friends at Santerrem, and renewed his studies. Here he formed the design of writing his poem on the discovery of India by Vasco de Gama. He soon grew tired, however, of a life of inactivity and obscurity under the disgrace of banishment; he therefore resolved to share the danger and glory of his countrymen in Africa, and accordingly set out for Ceuta with a body of troops sent to reinforce that garrison. In the Straits of Gibraltar their ship was attacked by a Moorish galley of superior force; an engagement ensued, victory for some time remained doubtful; at length the enemy, after a desperate resistance, struck to the Portuguese. In this action Camoens gave the first signal proof of his courage; he was among the foremost in boarding the enemy, an enterprise in which he lost his right eye.

Of his courage in the field his brother soldiers bore ample testimony in many a hard-fought battle in the plains of Africa; where, at the close of every engagement, he no sooner sheathed the sword than he took up the pen, and in the finest strains of poetry celebrated the gallant achievements of his companions, but forgot his own. Nor did his commanders reward them, from the apprehension of giving offence to those personages whom he had formerly offended in his amours; so that the only mark of favour he received for many years' hard service under the scorching heavens of Africa, was permission to return to Lisbon.

After

After various fruitless attempts at court in soliciting an establishment suitable to his services, and finding himself exhausted, both of patience and pecuniary resources, he resolved at length to banish himself once more from his native country. Accordingly he set sail for India in 1553, with a determination never to return; as the ship left the Tagus he was heard to exclaim, in the words of the sepulchral monument of Scipio Africanus, *Ingrata patria, non possidebis ossa mea!* Ungrateful country, thou shalt not possess my bones!

As soon as he arrived in India he joined the Portuguese military as a gentleman volunteer; in this capacity he served in several successful expeditions against the native princes. Sometimes he accompanied the Portuguese commanders in their colonial embassies, so that in the course of a few years he visited various parts of the vast empires of India and of China, observing, in every place, with the eye of a philosopher, the genius, manners, customs, rites, and ceremonies of the natives.

Enriched with the treasures of knowledge he had thus acquired, he sat down in tranquillity in the island of Macao, where he had the good fortune to be appointed commissary of the estates of the defunct, and there composed the greatest part of his *Lusiad*; and revised such parts of it as were written from time to time in the camp or on the ocean. How much he valued this poem he gave a proof when shipwrecked on the coast of Malabar, at his return from Macao; he swam ashore, holding it up in one hand, whilst he beheld all he possessed besides swallowed up in the deep.

After various scenes of fortune in the Eastern world during sixteen years, *Camoens* returned to his native country in 1569. Three years after he published his *Lusiad*. King Sebastian was so pleased with the lines he addressed to him at the beginning of the first book, that he granted him a pension amounting to about fifteen pounds. This small annuity however he did not long enjoy, for when that unfortunate Prince was slain at the battle of Alcazar, Cardinal Henry succeeded to the crown, and lest there should be one generous act of his on record, he deprived the poet of his scanty stipend, and left him to beg a morsel of bread from door to door.

Enfeebled by age and the wounds he received in the service of his ungrateful country, the hoary decrepid bard, no longer able to support his wretched condition, took refuge in an alms-house, and there he eked out the remainder of his days on the pittances begged for him by a faithful old servant in the streets of Lisbon. In this miserable state expired the immortal Luis de Camoens, in the year 1579, at the age of sixty-two.

As to his person, Camoens was of a middle stature, had yellow hair, speaking eyes, and a fine complexion; he was graceful in deportment, active and vigorous both in mind and body. In courage he was not inferior to any of the heroes of his country; in letters he yielded to none of her scholars, and surpassed them all in genius. But what is most remarkable in his character is that invariable love of poetry which he preserved under all the vicissitudes of fortune. "He was a strong instance," says Voltaire, "of the irresistible impulse of Nature, which determines a true genius to follow the bent
" of

"of his talents, in spite of all the obstacles which would check his course." Very few perhaps merited this praise in a higher degree than Camoens; when neither persecution, nor distress, nor poverty, the dissipation of the camp, the dangers of the ocean, nor the horrors of a dungeon*, could blunt the force of his genius. Under every difficulty he still continued to write, describing what he had witnessed whilst the picture was fresh in his mind; a circumstance to which, in a great measure, is owing the many animated descriptions with which his *Lusiad* abounds. And as no poet, ancient or modern, encountered so many seas and storms, so none perhaps has described them so well. "His poem," says the celebrated Montesquieu, "recalls to our mind the charms of the *Odyssæy*, "and the magnificence of the *Æneid*."

Of this poem there are three translations in Latin, four in Spanish, two in Italian, three in French, and two in English. It was also translated into the Hebrew language, about sixty years ago, by a learned Jew named Luzzeto, who died in the Holy Land.

ANTONIO VIEIRA,

a celebrated Jesuit of the last century, was one of the greatest orators and divines that Portugal has hitherto produced. There is a work of his, in manuscript, preserved in the Vatican library, the labour of fifty years hard study; it is intitled *Clavis Prophetarum*, and is divided into three parts:

* He was banished to the island of Macao, prisoned at Goa on charges of misconduct in previous to his being appointed there to the his office, of which he honourably acquitted office of commissary; and at his return from himself, and recriminated his false accusers. thence, after suffering shipwreck, he was im-

the first treats *De regno Christi in terris consummato*; the second, *De ejusdem consummationis sincera imagine, novusque in mundo status elucidatur*; the third, *De tempore, quo, & quando consummandum est, & quandiu duraturum*. This work was never published.

Vieira has written several other works, some of which are published, and deservedly admired; particularly his sermons, which are written with such purity of style that he has been called the sacred Cicero, and father of Portuguese eloquence. "The greatest orator," says a Spanish historian, "that our peninsula has produced for the last century, was *Father Antonio Vieira*, a man of admirable talents and surpassing eloquence. His sermons, agreeably to the genius of the nation, are grave but strong and vehement, like the orations of Demosthenes."

The author and his writings were highly esteemed in various other parts of Europe; even the Jews admired his sermons; their Rabbi and preachers quoted them with great veneration, and often delivered whole discourses of his in the synagogue *verbatim*. His Portuguese brethren however thought they breathed too much liberality of sentiment; and though applauded by all good men, by the Inquisition he was imprisoned and punished; and but for the interposition of the Pope he must have fallen a victim to that persecuting tribunal. This *Vieira*, I believe, was the author of a book intitled *Arte de Furtar*; The Art of Thieving; a political satire.

Don

DON ALFONSO ALBUQUERQUE,

second viceroy of India; a distinguished character, whose conquests, treaties, and exalted policy subjected to the dominion of Portugal an immense portion of the Eastern world. The better to gain the affection and alliance of the natives, he made it a rule to marry his soldiers to the Indian women; for he thought this the surest way of possessing colonies, which in time would furnish troops and vessels. When the Persians sent an ambassador to him to demand tribute for the city of Ormuz, he ordered a silver basin to be laid before him full of bullets and points of spears: "Here," said he, "is the tribute the kings of Portugal pay." Impressed with the extent and rapidity of his conquests, Ismael, Sophi of Persia, soon after courted his friendship, and sent him an ambassador, named Bairembonat, with letters and presents. *Albuquerque* received him at Ormuz with great pomp, seated on a magnificent throne, surrounded by his officers. Bairembonat says, Oforius was struck with the venerable appearance, and the manly deportment, the dignified aspect, gray hairs, and keen sparkling eyes of the Portuguese hero.

One of Ismael's letters was addressed to King Emanuel; the other to *Albuquerque*. The former begins thus: "To the great and illustrious Monarch Emanuel, the ornament of Christian Princes, the support of Portugal, greeting: The beauty of thy actions, O illustrious Prince! may be compared to the fragrance of the most beautiful roses."

In

In the letter to *Albuquerque* are these words: "As the rising of
" the sun delights the sight, as aromatics delight the smell,
" so the fame of thy actions, illustrious general, affect me
" with the most ravishing pleasure."

De Castro relates, that just as *Albuquerque* was called from his high office, he had in contemplation one of the boldest projects that ever entered the head of man, namely, to change the course of the Nile, in order to sterilize such parts of the Turkish dominions as were fertilized by its annual overflows. He died on entering the bar of Goa, in the year 1515, and was interred in a small oratory built by himself in that city. In sixteen years after, his remains were brought to Portugal, by order of King Emanuel, and deposited in the convent of *Graça* at Lisbon.

DON JOHN DE MASCARENHAS.

The history of Portugal affords not a greater instance of courage, skill, and perseverance, than Don John de Mascarenhas displayed at the siege of Diu in the year 1546. He had but four or five hundred Portuguese in this fortress, when it was besieged by the combined forces of the King of Cambaya and the Grand Signior, amounting to thirty thousand disciplined troops, besides a prodigious number of pioneers and labourers. The ditches were levelled, the bastions battered down, the mines sprung, and breaches made in every quarter for the enemy to enter at the same time, yet they were defeated in every assault. Mojatacon, one of their generals, astonished at such unexampled acts of valour, exclaimed, "The Portuguese are
" certainly a distinct species of men; of such superior strength
" and

"and courage, that if Providence had not made them few in number, like the ferocious and venomous animals, and shut them up in the dens of the North, they would eventually destroy the rest of the human race."

It is worthy of remark, that the method so highly extolled of conducting an attack by parallels was followed at the above siege. In Europe it was not used before the siege of Maestricht in 1673, where M. de Vauban put it into practice, after borrowing the idea, as it is supposed, of the Portuguese or Turks. That the latter were well versed in this mode of attack, is evident from the manner in which they conducted the above siege. The out-works consisted of a parallel, bastioned with parapets cased with hard stone. The front of the attack being defended by this parallel, the approach was made by a trench secured by ramparts; the zig-zag was conducted by numerous windings, in the form of a labyrinth. The head of the trench was guarded by another parallel, rampared, lined, and bastioned like the first; and all these ramparts and bastions were covered with several pieces of artillery. One of the cannons was brought to Portugal, and is still preserved in the Royal foundry at Lisbon; it is twenty-eight palms in length, and of a proportionable calibre.

DIOGO BOTELHO.

An instance of the bold and enterprising spirit of the Portuguese in past ages is exemplified in *Diogo Botelho*; who was a foldier of fortune in India in the reign of John III. He happened to fall into disgrace on account of a rumour having gone abroad, intimating that he was about to enter into the service

service of the enemy; therefore, in order to wipe off this stain, and to regain the favour of his sovereign, he undertook a voyage, which, every circumstance considered, is perhaps the most daring and perilous upon record. The motive was this. *Botelho* knowing how earnestly the King desired the possession of Diu, which was besieged by the troops of Portugal, resolved to be the messenger in bringing home the glad tidings of its surrender. He accordingly set out on pretence for Cambaya, with a plan of the fortress, and a copy of the terms of capitulation, in a bark of a peculiar construction which he had privately built. This bark was eighteen feet long by six broad and four deep. Three Portuguese sailors and some Indian slaves were his crew. When out in the ocean, they discovered his true purpose; a mutiny ensued, in which the sailors were killed, and soon after the slaves perished; so that *Botelho* was left alone to achieve the glorious enterprise. In the year 1535, he arrived in the river Tagus; the news was received at court with every demonstration of joy, and the messenger was pardoned for past transgression, which was the only favour he received.

It had been a maxim with the Portuguese, for many ages before, to magnify the danger and difficulty of their voyages, with a view to deter others from intruding upon their colonial commerce: Influenced by this system of policy, and lest their neighbours should discover that it was possible, in a small vessel like the above, to sail from Pole to Pole, the King, after admiring the bark, ordered it to be committed to the flames; whereas, says a Spanish historian, he should have hung it up in the most conspicuous part of his palace, as a trophy of nautical enterprise unparalleled in the rolls of naval fame.

DON GARCIA DE NERONHA

was appointed governor of the States of India in the reign of John III. and there amassed an immense fortune by a forgery, a greater than which, perhaps, was never before accomplished. At the death of the King of Cambaya, the nation was embroiled in a civil war by the contentions of his three sons, *Menri*, *Acedkám*, and *Adélkám*, each of whom maintained an exclusive right to the succession. During these commotions *Acedkám* conspired with the treasurer to secure all the riches of the late King; which, agreeably to his instructions, he carried off to Cananor, where the prince was to follow him; his enemies, however, contrived to put *Acedkám* to death before he arrived. *Neronha* was not an idle spectator in this affair; through his emissaries he had intimation of all that was passing, and thought himself justified by state craft to exert his ingenuity in order to lay hands on the treasure; for this purpose he forged a letter, in the name of the next brother *Adélkám*, to *Xamscedin* the treasurer, reproaching his conduct with baseness and treachery, and commanding him, under pain of death, to deliver up the whole, in trust, into the hands of *Neronha*. *Xamscedin* incensed at the contents of this letter, unsuspecting of its legitimacy, thought it advisable, in this dilemma, to secure the friendship of *Neronha* by surrendering the whole at his disposal. It amounted to upwards of a million of gold *pardoas* in specie, besides precious stones valued at double that sum; among which was a diamond of immense value.

ANTHONY PERIZ.

In the reign of King Deniz, a champion of undaunted prowess, named *Antony Periz*, rendered his name memorable in the parish annals of the town of Chaves, in the province of Minho, where he is interred at the foot of a lofty mountain; his fame, perhaps, would also have been buried here, were it not for the muse of one as extraordinary as himself, a neighbouring priest, who, having the honour of being epitaph grinder to the same parish, displayed his knowledge of the Maccaroni Latin current in those days, in recording the feats of this hero in the following epitaph:

Hic jacet Antonius Periz,

Vassalus Domini Regis,

Contra Castellanos missa,

Occidit omnes que quizo;

Quantos vivos rapuit

Omnes esbarrigavit;

Per istas ladeiras

Tulit tres vandeiras,

Et febre correptus,

Hic jacet Sepultus.

Faciant Castellani feste

Quia Mortua est sua peste.

Here lies brave Antony Periz,
Vassal of our good King Deniz,
Who fought the Spaniards on a day,
And cut them down like mows of hay;

Took

Took some alive, that could not run,
 Whose paunch he pierc'd by way of fun;
 Then down these hills a-prancing came,
 Sporting the trophies of his fame;
 Grim Death pranc'd him at length away,
 And gave him to his mother clay;
 Let Castile's sons this day rejoice,
 For low he lies who scourg'd their vice.

DON JERONYMO DE AZEVEDO.

The Portuguese, towards the decline of their sovereignty in Asia, by their cowardice and cruelty disgraced the noble character established by their ancestors. But of all the governors sent thither, *Azevedo* was the most infamous. At Ceylon, one time, he ordered a number of children to be thrown between two mill-stones and ground in pieces in the presence of their parents; and such of the parents too as resisted his decrees shared the same fate. He used to amuse himself and his soldiers by throwing his prisoners over the bridge of Malvana to see the crocodiles devour them. So accustomed were the crocodiles to this food, says Faria, that they would crowd to the place at the sight of the victims.

This tyrant was appointed viceroy of India in the year 1612. By his system of terror and rapine he amassed immense riches. Towards the latter end of his administration, he complained one day of the great losses he recently sustained by his trading vessels. *Nuno da Cunha*, one of his officers, said, "You are still worth five hundred thousand crowns;" *That is nothing*, replied *Azevedo*; *my stable is worth more.* Shortly after he was recalled to

Portugal, and no sooner had he entered the bar of Lisbon than the whole was seized by government, he was bound in chains, and dragged to a dungeon; where, after exhausting the remainder of his life upon charity, he died in the greatest misery.

ATAIDE.

In the year 1516, *Ataide*, who was general of the Portuguese forces in Africa, marched by night with an army of four thousand five hundred cavalry, and surprised a Moorish camp in the territory of Morocco; after plundering it of every thing of value, he retired with a vast booty. Among the prisoners who fell into his hands was a lady of extraordinary beauty, the wife of Raho Ben Xamut, the Moorish general; her loss afflicted Raho more than all the rest, for he loved her tenderly; therefore he resolved to rescue her or die. Accordingly he rallied his troops and pursued the Portuguese, whom he overtook next day in a valley where they halted during the meridian heat. Here, as both armies were drawn up in embattled rank, the fair captive, whose name was Hota, asked *Ataide's* permission to speak to her husband; which being granted, she thus addressed him from the van of the Portuguese army:

“ O Raho! how often have you declared you would rather
“ die than see me in the hands of your enemy; and now that
“ fortune has brought me to this ignominious state, you seem
“ unconcerned. Have you forgotten your solemn vows? Has
“ your courage forsaken you? Where now is your wonted
“ valour? Ah! you cannot love me, and thus behold the sworn
“ enemies

"enemies of our religion triumphantly dragging me into
"captivity."

The husband replied, "Raho does not forget his vows, nor
"has he lost his courage; do not despair; the day is not yet
"ended; there is strength in my right-hand, and victory is still
"at the disposal of the Supreme Being;" upon this he took off
his shoe and threw it towards her as a pledge of his love.

The lady was now conveyed to the rear of the Portuguese
line. The Moorish general appeared in the front of his army
haranguing his men. "If ever," concluded he, "you felt
"the pangs of love; if Nature ever inspired you with compas-
"sion for the sufferings of beauty and innocence, have pity
"on the unfortunate Hota, and preserve my life and my ho-
"nour, by rescuing her out of the hands of these Christian
"tyrants. Brother soldiers, this day will immortalize your
"names; remember, you have sworn by the law of our high
"Prophet either to die or liberate the fair captive."

After this he pushed on his men, who, encouraged by his
example, charged the Portuguese with great warmth; Raho,
in person, encountered *Ataide*, and in the first assault slew him
with a javelin. The Portuguese, confused and disheartened at
the death of their general, fled in every direction, leaving the
Moors in possession of their camp. And thus Raho recovered
his wife and the booty.

The Moorish general now returned home with all the pomp
of a Roman conqueror; his valour was admired by all; short-
lived,

lived, however, was his glory; he was killed a few days after in a pitched battle.

The beautiful Hota, though unable to support the ignominy of a captive, now, with more than Spartan fortitude, voluntarily and deliberately encountered death. Having paid the last faithful duty to the remains of her husband, she fasted nine days, and thus ended her existence; leaving orders to be interred in the same grave with her beloved Raho.

FERNANDO DE MAGALHANES.

This celebrated navigator, after serving his country for many years in Africa and Asia, returned to Lisbon and petitioned King Emanuel for an addition to his monthly salary of a *testoon*, that, is seven pence halfpenny; this, however, he was refused, and otherwise treated with such contumely, that he resolved to forsake his native country; accordingly he repaired to Castile, and entered into the service of Charles V. In the year 1517, a contract was formed between him and that Emperor, whereby it was stipulated, that he should have the title of Governor-general of all the lands he could discover, with the twentieth part of all their produce and revenue; and if he discovered eight islands, that two of them should belong entirely to himself and his heirs for ever.

On the 10th of August 1519 he set sail from Seville with five ships, of which he was appointed Captain-general, and vested with full power in all cases civil and criminal. Having passed the coast of Brazil, he continued his southerly course
till

till the month of September 1520; when, in latitude fifty-three, he discovered a narrow sea, which he called after his own name, the *Streights of Magalbanes*. After various difficulties he came at last to the island of Marten, where he was treacherously killed by the prince of that island.

DON JOHN DE COUTINHO.

When this gentleman was general of the Portuguese forces in Africa, he had among his prisoners an aged Moor descended of a noble family. This Moor had an only daughter, who was inconsolable for his loss; she tried various means to release him, but in vain; at last she informed a youth who paid his addresses to her, that she would consent to give him her hand, if he could devise some means to liberate her father; until which she was resolved not to enter into the marriage state.

The youth immediately mounted his horse, and rode off to the Portuguese camp; having arrived in the presence of *Coutinho*, he prostrated himself at his feet, and entreated him, in the most pathetic language, to receive him as his prisoner in lieu of the aged Moor. "It is true," said he, "the prisoner is descended of a noble family, but my family is not inferior to his; moreover I am rich, but he is poor; I am young, but he is old; I shall probably be a lasting security in your hands, whereas, according to the course of nature, you cannot long detain him from his kindred dust. Noble general, we are well assured of your valour; convince the world that you are merciful as well as brave, by restoring this venerable old man to his disconsolate daughter, at whose request

"I came.

"I came hither to purchase his liberty at the expence of
"my own."

Coutinho, with a gallantry and generosity truly Lusitanian, liberated both; and to shew he respected virtue even in an enemy, sent a troop of horse to escort them home in a manner suitable to their quality.

DON ANTONIO GALVAON.

Of all the Portuguese governors in India, the character of *Antonio Galvaon* for unblemished integrity stands the most exalted. When he was governor of the Molucco Islands, in the reign of John III. his time was occupied in acts of beneficence that would not dishonour an Apostle; in humanizing and instructing the natives in agriculture, arts, religion, and letters. He founded, at his own expence, seminaries of education for the children of the natives; the first establishment of the kind known in those parts. He did not fail, at the same time, to extend the Portuguese dominions in India. He rebuilt and repaired several fortresses and towns that were demolished or dilapidated in former wars; he established a permanent peace between his country and the natives, and reconciled the dissensions between the latter and the Moors; so that all parties, laying aside their feuds and animosities, turned their hostile weapons into implements of industry. In short, his sound policy, his tried valour, and sincere disposition to promote the happiness of his fellow-creatures, of all religious descriptions, so endeared him to the inhabitants of Ternati in particular, that they repeatedly solicited him to become their king; but in vain. Humanity weeps for the neglected fate of this
transcendent

transcendent character. He returned to Lisbon, ungrateful country! but his laurels availed him not; he was poor, and consequently despised, by a degenerate race, lost to every sense of genuine worth; the hospital of Lisbon became his refuge, and one of the charitable institutions of that city defrayed the expence of his funeral!

DON LUIS DE ATAIDE

was governor of the states of India in the reign of King Sebastian, and the last of the honest Portuguese who commanded in that country. "So clear was his heart from the infection of avarice," says Faria, "that while others carried immense treasures from Asia to Portugal, he only brought four jars of water, filled from the four great rivers, *Tygris*, *Euphrates*, *Indus*, and *Ganges*; which were for many years preserved as trophies in his castle at Peniche."

DONA ISABELLA.

The high courage and exemplary fortitude which animated every class of the Portuguese during their heroic age, were strongly characterised in *Dona Isabella*, mother of Philip the Second of Spain. When this Queen was in labour of the Prince, she caused all the lights to be extinguished, lest her attendants should observe her countenance change during the violence of the pain. And when the midwife said, Madam, shriek out, and it will cause you to be delivered the easier; the Queen replied, in the Portuguese language, *I would much rather die than shriek, or utter a groan.*

Dona BEATRIX.

This amiable woman was the wife of *Don Paul de Lima Pereira*, a captain in the Royal Navy, whom she accompanied to India; and there, after a residence of several years, they amassed an ample fortune, with which they set out for Portugal, their native country. Having sailed nearly as far as the Cape of Good Hope, their vessel was cast away in a violent tempest, in which all on board perished, except *Dona Beatrix*, with her husband and sixteen others, who reached the shore in the long-boat; and these, for the most part, escaped the waves but to endure a more lingering death by famine. Of the number who thus fell was *De Lima*. *Dona Beatrix*, who received his departing sigh in a distracted embrace, thought to lay down her life in his arms. With much difficulty, however, she was dissuaded by two ladies, her fellow-sufferers, whose husbands had shared the same fate. She then began to devise means for carrying away the corpse; but finding that impossible, and still unwilling to be separated from the remains of a husband whom she so tenderly loved, she called forth every spark of resolution whilst she dissected the body and excarnated the bones, which she folded up in one of her garments, and then proceeded on her journey.

After travelling several days, feeding on herbs, Providence miraculously supported them till they reached a head-land, where they were descried by a Portuguese ship bound to India, which took them on board. As soon as they arrived at Goa, the faithful *Dona Beatrix* lodged the precious bones of her beloved husband in a convent of the order of Saint Francis;
from

from thence she carried them to Lisbon, and finally deposited them in a handsome tomb, in which she afterwards reposed.

MAGRIÇO.

In the reign of our Henry IV. twelve English barons gave out that certain ladies, whom they named, were not entitled, by birth, beauty, or education, to the high rank they held at court; and that they would take up arms against any twelve champions in Europe who dare come forth in their defence. Intimation of this challenge was received at Portugal; and as none had hitherto undertaken to appear in defence of the injured ladies, *Magriço*, with eleven other Portuguese cavaliers*, set out from Oporto to espouse their cause; having previously obtained permission from their Sovereign John I. The English Monarch, on being apprised of their arrival, prepared a splendid banquet suitable to the occasion; to him was left to choose the arms to be used by the combatants, and to appoint the day and the situation; which was on the south banks of the Thames.

The spectators being assembled in a vast amphitheatre, the champions rode into the arena at the sound of trumpet, each armed with a sword and a lance. Upon the appearance of the Portuguese, the circle resounded with applause, particularly

* The Portuguese cavaliers were, 1. *Alvaros Gonçalves Coutinho*, surnamed *Magriço*. 2. *Alvaro de Almada*. 3. *Alvaro Mendes Cerveira*. 4. *Alvaro Vaz de Almada*, afterwards honoured with the order of the Garter, and by his prowess in Normandy he obtained the title of Count de Avranches. 5. *John Pereira Agostinho*. 6. *Lopo Fernandes Pacheco*. 7. *Luiz Gonçalves Malafaya*. 8. *Martin Lopes de Azevedo*. 9. *Pedro Homem da Costa*. 10. *Ruy Gomes da Silva*. 11. *Ruy Mendes Cerveira*. 12. *Soeiro da Costa*.
Vide *Baptista de Castro* in *Mapa de Portugal*, tom. ii. p. 401 & seq.

on the part of the ladies, who were present. As soon as his Majesty, who presided at this spectacle, had given the signal, the attack commenced; and was maintained for a considerable time with great skill and courage on both sides, infomuch that victory for some time remained doubtful. The Portuguese, however, being very expert at the lance, and animated by the cheers of the ladies, wounded several of their adversaries, and unhorsed others; so that the King at length proclaimed them conquerors.

The ladies now, with acclamations of joy, assembled round the victors; crowned them with chaplets of roses, interwoven with ribands, and carried them off in triumph. And further to express their gratitude, at the departure of their gallant defenders they presented them with swords, spears, and shields, ornamented with various devices, as trophies of their victory. Nor were the honours less which awaited them at their return to Portugal; they were received in triumph, and caressed by the ladies, whose cause they vowed to defend all over the world. *Magriço* afterwards signalised his valour in defence of Isabella of Portugal, Countess of Flanders. In a dispute with Charles VII. of France, she offered, according to the custom of that age, to appeal to the decision of arms; the proposal was accepted, and *Magriço* slew the champion appointed by Charles, named *De Lansay*, and brought off as a trophy of his victory a collar of gold which the vanquished wore to guard his neck.

C H A P. XXVIII.

Narrative of Don PEDRO DE MENTIROSO.

BEING one morning in the cloister of the Convent of St. Francis in the city of Evora, I was accosted by a gentleman, who requested to know if I was going to Madrid, in which case he would be happy in the honour of my company; adding, that he hoped I enjoyed good health since he saw me last. After pausing a while, I recollected this was the strange character who came passenger with me a few months before from Villa Franca to Lisbon; he then wore the remains of a Persian dress, under a pilgrim's scapulet; he was now dressed in a suit of deep mourning. At first I conceived, from his dialect, that he was a Spaniard, but on closer inquiry I found he was a native of Portugal. As we are both strangers in this town, said he, I shall esteem the honour of your company to partake of such fare as my inn affords. The Prior of the convent, who happened to overhear the conversation, came up at the same time, saying, "If you will condescend to dine in the humble cell of a poor Franciscan, you must be my guests to-day;" we thanked him, and accepted his hospitable offer.

From the moment I first saw this exotic pilgrim at Villa Franca, I was struck with the singularity of his appearance;

his Persian garb, worn and wretched, betrayed all the external marks of misery. Yet there was a placidity in his manners, a dignity in his mien and address, an intelligence in his countenance, which incited in me a strong desire to inquire into his history; and the change I now perceived in his apparel and condition stimulated that desire. I therefore took the liberty to ask him whence he came, and how long since he left Persia; which he answered apparently without reserve. The Prior, finding by this specimen of his conversation that he was a very intelligent and communicative traveller, proposed that we should retire to a shady arbour at the rear of the convent, to hear his narrative more at leisure. In this sombrous retreat he gave us the following sketch of his adventures.

We shall pass over the tedious and pompous account of his lineage, in which he traced eminent statesmen, dignified churchmen, voluminous historians, and profound antiquaries. My name, said he, is *Pedro de Mentiroso*; my native town, Ponta de Lima, in the province of Minho. My father, who was a merchant in that province, had three sons, of whom I am the youngest. At the age of ten I was sent to a Dominican convent, where I continued five years, and was flattered with the approbation of my teachers for the progress I made in my studies.

When the time approached that I was to take the habit as a disciple of St. Dominick, I began seriously to reflect on the monastic state, and finding it averse from my disposition or
genius,

genius, I resolved to abandon the convent. Sensible, however, of the duty I owed to my parents, I returned home and communicated my sentiments to them; but to no effect. My father continued inexorable; he informed me, that all the property he had amassed was to have been laid out in the purchase of an estate, to enable my eldest brother to support the title he was promised for him; and who, from his interest at court, would probably have it in his power to raise me in the church, as well as my other brother, who had already entered into orders. In short, he declared that if I did not return to my convent, he should no longer consider me as his son.

The struggle between filial and conscientious duty rendered me extremely unhappy; on either hand, I foresaw that misery was inevitable; in this dilemma I began to reflect on the cruelty of those parents who, in order to aggrandise one of their children, scruple not to sacrifice the rest to their vain ambition, leaving them no alternative but to immure themselves in the gloom of a convent, however repugnant to their inclination, or to gain a precarious subsistence by their talents. After mature consideration I resolved to embrace the lesser evil. I could not, however, depart without my father's blessing, which he gave me with tears in his eyes; and the benediction inspired me with hopes.

Next morning, without communicating my intention to any of my family or friends, I set out for Madrid, assumed the name of Francisco de Gongora, disclaimed my family and my country, resolving never more to return to either.

I had

I had scarcely been a week in the capital of Spain when my resources were exhausted. How to subsist I knew not; there was no time for deliberation, no expedient but the army; which I immediately entered. You may readily suppose the transition from the missal to the musket could not at first be very agreeable; yet when I became inured to the hardships of a soldier, I felicitated myself on the change. In three years I was promoted to the rank of lieutenant, and shortly after sent to South America with the corps to which I belonged.

Having arrived at Mexico, I waited on the viceroy with letters from the Marquis de M——, his kinsman. To this nobleman I was indebted for my promotion, and many other acts of friendship, the cause of which still remains a mystery to me; unless I may be allowed to conjecture that he was the personage whom I rescued one night at Madrid when assailed by two assassins. However that was, in consequence of his recommendation the viceroy soon promoted me to the rank of captain in his body guards. Nor did his munificence rest here. Seeing me zealously attached to his person, whilst I actively performed the duty of the soldier, he honoured me with his confidence; and intrusted me, more than once, in affairs of the last importance. As his secretary, I visited Castile del Ouro, California, and the Philippine Islands. Unfortunately, however, before I returned from the latter, my friend and benefactor paid the last debt to Nature.

The only surviving issue of the deceased was a daughter, named Leonora, a lady endued with every accomplishment of mind and person. On the death of her father she retired to

Lima

Lima in Peru, and there lived with her uncle, who was governor of that province, and sole executor of the deceased. I forwarded to him my papers, and every particular relating to my commission under his late brother; and so soon as my military avocations permitted, I visited him at Lima. Here I once more beheld the beautiful Leonora, enhanced in every charm. Our mutual attachment did not escape the notice of her guardian; he sent for me, and questioned me on that head; and instead of pronouncing the sentence my fears had anticipated, he embraced me with all the tenderness of a father, in the presence of his confessor and Leonora. "Don Francisco," said he, "my brother, our late much beloved viceroy, had strictly enjoined me, at his last moments, to reward your fidelity with the hand of Dona Leonora; and you are named in his will, conjointly with her, sole heirs to his fortune." This happened about three years after the viceroy's death, but the particulars of the will were kept secret till now, when the lady attained her sixteenth year. Orders were given immediately for the celebration of the nuptials, which my worthy friend survived but a few months.

Having paid the last sad duty to the remains of the governor, and arranged our affairs at Peru, we returned to Mexico, and shortly after embarked at Vera Cruz, in a ship bound to Cadiz; accompanied by an Armenian priest named Honorius, who had been a constant companion of mine ever since I visited the Philippine Islands.

For three weeks we continued our course with a prosperous gale; and as we were flattering ourselves with a speedy prospect

D D

of

of the Old World, a violent tempest gathered from the north-west, which carried away our masts and rudder. In this state of distress we continued at the mercy of the wind and waves during six weeks, when our shattered vessel sprang a leak. With Leonora in my arms, accompanied by the captain and six of the crew, we committed ourselves to the mercy of the elements in the long-boat.

During two days and a night our giddy bark bore up against the awful conflict of the wind and waves. The situation of Leonora absorbed all my thoughts; and I well remember the divine serenity with which she withstood the tremendous scene; methinks, indeed, I now behold her beautiful locks floating in the gale, and the spray beating upon her lovely form. But, alas! distressing as this scene was, a more melancholy one ensued. Honorius, who preferred remaining in the ship to meet his fate, was wafted to the side of the boat on a raft he had formed of empty casks and planks tied together. In attempting to save him, I was washed overboard by a wave, and separated in an instant from all I held dear. The venerable Honorius, however, performed that part for me, which I attempted to do for him. Next day we found ourselves within sight of land; and towards evening, when the storm abated, we were taken up by a canoe manned with black people. This happened on that part of Africa called Sanâga.

The poignant anguish I felt may be better imagined than described. Day and night I wept and watched, expecting some friendly wave would have wafted the corse of Leonora to me, but in vain. I invoked the Blessed Virgin for her protection; and vowed to consecrate the remainder of my
wretched

wretched life to solitude and tears. [On this, he kissed a small gold cross, studded with precious stones, which hung from his neck, and paused for some moments.]

But to go on with my sad story. I now resigned myself entirely to despair; life became insupportable, and I longed to resign this wretched frame to its kindred dust. The measure of my misfortune, however, was not yet filled. On the third day we were conveyed by a number of the natives to a neighbouring village, consisting of about six score leafy cottages, the largest of which was the residence of the chieftan. We endeavoured, by signs, to make him sensible of our catastrophe; he surveyed us with astonishment; having noticed this cross hanging upon my breast, he conducted us to an aged cyprus tree, at the foot of which was a large stone bearing a cross and this motto, TAILANT DE BIEN FAIRE.

The sight of this monument inspired us with hopes; we offered up thanks to Heaven, and felt no less satisfaction than Aristippus the philosopher when shipwrecked on the coast of Rhodes; who exclaimed to his companions, on observing some geometrical figures on the shore, *Courage, my friends; here are vestiges of men.*

After this our host entertained us with milk and dried fruit, and ordered a corner of his rustic palace to be strewn with palm leaves for our beds. Next morning he accompanied us to the sea-coast, where we collected several fragments of the wreck which the waves had waisted a-shore; among other articles we found a large chest containing several valuable

robes and precious stones. With these and other presents, accompanied by twenty men and five camels, we were sent to a prince named Caramanza.

This prince resided in a city of Africa called Xafra, about five hundred miles from the coast of Sanâga. After innumerable hardships, we reached our journey's end in seven weeks. Now we considered ourselves as delivered up to perpetual slavery. Death would have been preferable to the state of misery I pictured to myself, and should have sunk under the weight of affliction, were it not for the philosophy and firmness of Honorius. This reverend sage, in order to lighten the burden of our chains, devised a plan which inspired me with hopes that Providence had destined us to carry the glad tidings of salvation among these barbarous people. In order therefore the more effectually to accomplish this grand object, we had recourse to an expedient which, under these circumstances, I trust will be found pardonable.

Soon after our arrival at Xafra we were brought before Caramanza the King. He was seated in a large hall on an elevated throne of ebony, surrounded by his attendants. His head was bound with a chaplet of white silk, worked in a variety of devices; his legs and arms were encircled with rings of gold; from his collar hung a number of small bells; his beard was interwoven with silver wires. His age was about sixty; his countenance serenely grave; robust and tall in stature, without covering, save a girdle about his loins; the rest of his body was painted in various colours. He ordered us, by a motion of his hand, to approach, saying, *Bere*; which, in his dialect, signifies *peace*. This monosyllable
inspired

inspired us with fresh hopes, as we now considered ourselves the humble ambassadors of the Prince of Peace.

Accordingly we advanced, and prostrated ourselves before the throne; after which Honorius, who spoke the language of the country with fluency, began by representing to his Majesty, that our master the King of Spain, the most potent Monarch in the Christian world, was commanded by a vision from Heaven to send an embassy to a certain king of Africa named Caramanza, in order to make known to him the manifold rewards that await all who believe and practise the doctrine of the Christian religion. That for this purpose we were sent hither, with a numerous retinue, letters and presents of immense value, intended for his Majesty; but unfortunately the ship was lost on the coast of Sanâga, with all its riches, except the robes and precious stones contained in the chest which lay at the foot of the throne; and that we were the only persons who survived the disaster, as if alone found worthy, in the sight of God, to approach Caramanza with the most precious of all presents—the sacred truths of the Gospel. That although the dispatches with which we had been charged in this important embassy were lost, yet we perfectly remembered their contents entirely related to the salvation of his Majesty's immortal part; which all wise men held superior to every other consideration. And that we were commanded by the King our master to assure him, if he embraced his spiritual offer, he would evermore consider Caramanza as his brother in faith, and henceforth shew him and his nation every friendship and honour.

The

The King listened with attention, and desired, before he proceeded farther in his discourse, to call in the Queen and her three daughters. They entered the hall in great pomp, preceded by three pages strewing aromatic perfumes, and followed by a number of attendants of both sexes. The Queen and Princesses were covered, from the waist downwards, with white transparent garments, fastened by a zone of gold. Their arms were adorned with bracelets of pearls; their heads bound by fillets of gold, studded with precious stones. Having ascended a few steps to an estrade, they sat on cushions at the King's right-hand, and Honorius was desired to resume his discourse.

The court, at this time, was crowded with the magi, and other persons of distinction, ranged according to their respective ranks; a more solemn scene of barbaric grandeur cannot be conceived. The eyes of the assembly were fixed on us; astonishment was depicted in every countenance, and an awful silence reigned throughout.

Honorius, after paying his obeisance to the Queen and Princesses, held forth his hand, in a reverential posture, and in a firm tone continued for the space of two hours to unfold the blessings of Christianity, promulged by infinite wisdom for the happiness of man. The divine truths succeeded beyond our most sanguine expectation; for in a short time the King, with all his family, were baptized, and became members of the Christian faith.

Caramanza used often to converse with us on the tenets of his former religion; for which, notwithstanding his conversion,

sion, he had still a particular veneration. He held the sun to be the vegetative source and soul of the universe, and as such worshipped it as a visible image and symbol of a Supreme God; whom he believed to be the Sovereign Lord of Nature. Every seventh day, at the rising of the sun, he went to a large circus, which stood in an elevated situation in the middle of the city. Here, in the midst of his people, he offered up prayers to *Tená*; which signifies God. In the centre of this edifice stood a quadrangular pyramid of immense height, from each side of which continually flowed a stream of pure water. Its apex was crowned with an orb of transparent stone, resembling alabaster; which orb, being hollow, and supplied with a kind of perpetual fire, darted forth innumerable rays. This was the only tangible representation of the Divinity in the city of Xafra. There were neither temples, nor altars, nor statues; and though the people worshipped the sun, they considered it as idolatrous to bend the knee to any of the revolving planets.

It would require volumes to detail the various incidents I witnessed in that country during a residence of eight years. All this time I was occupied in disseminating useful knowledge and promoting industry, while Honorius was employed in converting the people, and raising altars to the true God. The example of the King was even greater than his authority in promoting these objects. Thanks be to Providence, that made us the humble agents in diffusing so many blessings among our fellow-creatures. I now look back with satisfaction on my perils and disappointments, convinced that all was the predetermined will of Heaven.

In

In short, after the death of Caramanza, as he had no male issue, several competitors started up for the crown, which plunged the country into a civil war. Amidst these convulsions Honorius and I crossed the desert; and reached that part of the coast of Africa opposite the Cape Verd Islands. Here we had the good fortune to find a Portuguese ship, in which we set sail for Goa in India. From hence we set out over-land for Europe. Honorius being desirous to visit the Holy Land, we passed through Persia to Jerusalem. Here the affectionate, the faithful companion of my exile, worn out with fatigue and age, gave up the ghost! And indeed, were it not a violation of the laws of Heaven, I would have ended my existence to repose in the same grave with him. Desolate and wretched, I arrived at Alexandria; from thence I sailed on board a French ship to Sicily, and at length landed at Barcelona.

I must leave you to imagine what I felt when I came within view of Spain, and began to breathe my native air. Though deprived of fortune, of friends, and, what was more dear than all, of the partner of my soul, that angel of ineffable beauty Leonora; yet I trusted that Providence, which so often interposed in my behalf, had still reserved some balm of consolation for my afflicted heart; and that at least I should have the satisfaction to arrive in time to behold my aged parents.

Accordingly I set out for the province of Minho in Portugal, in the dress of a pilgrim. What a dismal appearance every thing presented on my arrival at Ponte de Lima, after an absence of two-and-twenty years! Not a face could I recollect; and the effects of climate, the vicissitudes of fortune, together with my wretched Persic vestments and religious appendages,

pendages, made such an alteration in me, that I passed for a stranger in my native town.

Having learned among the neighbours the little history of my family, and found that my father was still living, I took an opportunity to accost him one evening as he sat under the shade of a vine-grove poring over the Bible. And as I knew the placidity of his temper, I spoke to him in this free manner.

Pilgrim. I am sorry, Sir, to see you so worn and infirm.

Father. (After pausing a moment, he laid down the Bible and took off his spectacles.) I thank you, Mr. Pilgrim. You are now setting out on your pilgrimage, but I have nearly passed through mine; and I wish you may not find the tedious road so rugged as I have found it.

Pilgrim. Be assured, Sir, I also have had my pilgrimage, and have not travelled thus far through flowery paths.

Father. No doubt, friend; "Man is born unto trouble, as the sparks fly upward."

Pilgrim. It is now above twenty years since I saw you last; how worn! how changed!—

Father. Others have told me the same. It is not time alone, however, that has wrought the change; affliction and disappointment have conspired. About the time you mention I was the happiest man in Portugal. These hairs were then black; but since they have been drenched in sorrow, and it has dyed them

them grey;—sorrow, which I must ever cherish, for an affectionate wife and hopeful offspring, who are no more! they have sunk into the grave, and left me, like yonder drooping cyprus bereft of its foilage, withered and forlorn, ready to sink with the first blast.

Pilgrim. Since Heaven ordained it so, we should not repine. I knew your eldest son, I hope he is living?

Father. Alas! he fell a victim to my folly and his own at Lisbon. He gave into the vices of that city, which brought on his dissolution; and my second son died soon after in his convent.

Pilgrim. Your son Pedro, I hope—

Father. Pray friend do not mention him—His fate rests heavier upon my heart than that of all the rest. I was accessory to his death; Providence, however, has protracted my days, to atone for that crime with the tears of repentance.

Pilgrim. Are you certain, Sir, that he is dead?

Father. Dead he certainly is, for I have not heard of him these two-and-twenty years past.

Pilgrim. That is no proof, Sir; do not despair; he may still be living. I have seen him later than the time you mention.

Father. Ah! Mr. Pilgrim, I have past the age of credulity; all earthly hopes are extinguished in me, and are not to be revived; do not mock an unfortunate old man.

Pilgrim.

Pilgrim. I do not tell you a falsehood; I call St. James to witness, whose habit I wear.

(Upon this the old man rose from his seat, and laid his hand upon my shoulder, saying) "Hasten then, I beseech you, relate to me what you know of him, and you will heal my bleeding heart."

Pilgrim. For the present let it suffice to say, that you need be under no apprehension for the safety of your son Pedro; nay, ere long you shall see him. I have been his companion over a great part of the globe, and a constant sharer of his various fortune, amidst scenes of difficulty and woe; which he combated, under the protection of Heaven, with the manly fortitude of a Christian gentleman.

As I pronounced these words, a transient joy beamed from the old man's eyes; he took me by the hand, saying, "Most pious pilgrim, you have travelled, I perceive, to some purpose; far at least in the regions of the human heart. You have explored the fabulous world, whence you have returned fraught with amusing tales; but they are such tales as please old age sunk into childhood. I shall therefore be glad to hear the remainder of your romance; but you seem fatigued, and in need of refreshment; come with me."

The moment I entered the once cheerful mansion, the remembrance of my mother and brothers rushed upon my imagination; I strove to repress my grief, but in vain; Nature enforced her tribute in a flood of tears. The good old man seeing this, put his handkerchief to his face and also wept.

I now longed to remove the weight which pressed so heavy upon his mind; apprehensive, however, that his feeble state could not bear the sudden transition, I waited to unfold the matter by degrees. Towards the conclusion of my narrative, I had the satisfaction to find his incredulity began to give way, inasmuch that he exclaimed, "Verily thou hast seen my son; but I shall see him no more."—"Pardon me, Sir," said I, "you shall see him."—"I know I shall," quoth he, "but not on earth!"

Night approached. I thanked him for his hospitality, and rose to take leave till morning; hoping, in the mean time, to devise some proper mode of recognition. But he placed himself between me and the door, saying, "Friend, you must not go; stay with me as long as your religious obligations will permit you to remain at Ponta de Lima, and the repetition of your narrative will amply repay your lodging." So saying, he conducted me to a bed-chamber, where I retired after supper.

In broken slumbers I passed the night; sometimes musing on the happy interview, sometimes brooding on the hapless fate of Leonora. In this state I beheld a reverend figure, in a sable mantle, stealing into my room, with a dark-lantern in one hand and a crucifix in the other. Soft and slow it advanced to the bed-side, kneeled and prayed; then gently taking my hand, bathed it with tears. I was now convinced it was no supernatural visitation. "Pray," said I, "who art thou?" He replied, "Fear not, worthy stranger, I am Sebastian de Mentiroso. A vision hath just appeared unto me as I lay in bed, saying, 'Arise and embrace thy long lost son:' wherefore I come hither, and do henceforth adopt thee as my son. Wilt thou stay, and console me to the grave?"

By

By this time the warbling of the feathered tribe, under the window of my apartment, proclaimed the return of day. After dispatching the servant to call in some aged neighbours, I hastened to an adjacent convent, and developed the affair to the prior and two other friars. They accompanied me to the house. I prostrated myself at my father's feet. He viewed me attentively; and having recollected or conceived some family resemblance, a tear started; he threw himself on my neck, and remained speechless. As soon as he recovered the power of utterance, he exclaimed, in the words of old Simeon, *Lord, now lettest thou thy servant depart in peace, for mine eyes have seen thy salvation.*

Having offered up solemn thanks to Heaven for the recovery of his son, the old gentleman and his friends thought of nothing but rejoicing and feasting. I, however, did not forget the vow I made on the desolate cliffs of Sanâga to the manes of Leonora, and would have retired into a convent if my father's existence did not depend upon my society. At all events, I could not dispense with the promise I had made at the grave of Honorius, which was to go on a pilgrimage to St. Jago de Compostella, on my arrival in Portugal. My father having insisted upon accompanying me, we set out on our journey, and reached Compostella in six days. Here we took up our abode at the house of an Hidalgo, a kinsman of my father; who, rejoiced to see us, prepared a splendid entertainment, to which a select party of friends were invited. The evening was ushered in with the usual amusements. A guitar was handed round, and each accompanied its notes with some favourite air. When it came to my turn, rather than interrupt the harmonious

monious circle, I touched the strings to the following stanzas, which the beauty of Leonora had once inspired :

Now torn from all my bleeding heart held dear,
From all that's lovely, all that's good combined ;
In sorrow doom'd to shed the silent tear,
And sigh unconscious to the passing wind.

Fortune or friends no ease, no joy impart,
For Leonora th' tear shall constant flow ;
No more I'll press her bosom to my heart,
Ah me ! consign'd to solitude and woe.

One of the ladies who sat opposite to me, dressed in black and deeply veiled, was sensibly affected by the words ; and the company was no less affected at the tears that involuntarily trickled down her beautiful face. The gentlewoman of the house asked me a favour in her behalf, namely, to permit her to kiss the cross that hung upon my breast.—I approached the fair mourner and presented it to her ; she viewed it with great earnestness,—paused,—looked at me, then at the cross ;—amazed and agitated she turned it with trembling hand, and upon seeing the word LEONORA engraved on the reverse, she screamed, and fainted away in my arms.—

“ Pray, most reverend father,” (addressing himself to the prior,) “ hast thou ever felt the pangs of spiritual love ? Hast thou ever conceived the joys that pervade the souls of just men in Paradise ? Hast thy mind been at any time transported up to the third heavens in divine contemplation ? If thou canst form an

idea of these celestial joys, then mayst thou imagine what I felt on recognising my long lost Leonora."

Nor were the spectators to this scene insensible to our happiness, though ignorant of concurrent circumstances. As to my father, his temporal happiness was now consummated: whilst we dropped on our knees to ask his blessing, the tears stole down the furrows of his aged face; he raised up his eyes and hands, and in broken accents returned fervent thanks to Providence for having at the bounds of this life anticipated the joys of the next.

As soon as the tender interchange of looks and sighs gave way to words, we began to relate our mutual adventures. Leonora's was briefly this:—The day after we were separated, they were taken up by a Portuguese ship returning from Rio Janeiro, and carried to Lisbon. The humanity with which the captain treated them should not be forgotten; he hospitably entertained them at his house, and furnished Leonora with money to pursue her journey to Madrid, where she has since resided with her aunt Dona Maria de Gonfalez, till a few weeks before our interview, they came on a visit to Compostella to an old lady a relation of her mother. In gratitude for the generous treatment she received from her deliverer, I vowed not to sleep on a bed, nor cut off my beard, till I travelled barefoot to Lisbon to kiss the hand of the worthy captain who snatched my Leonora from the waves.

C H A P. XXIX.

ORIGIN OF PORTUGAL.

NOTWITHSTANDING what the Portuguese historians have written concerning the antiquity of their country, anterior to the dominion of the Romans, cannot, for the most, be considered but as a series of fabulous events; yet it may not be improper to say a few words on this head, as many parts of the kingdom are supposed to derive their names from the chieftans of those early times.

In the first place, they affirm, that Portugal was originally peopled by Tubal and his followers; and that he founded the city of Setubal. This is as clearly proved, as that Cape St. Vincent was originally called *Promontorium Sacrum*, in respect to his remains being interred therein 2009 years before Christ.

It is no less certain that *Iberia*, the most ancient name of Spain, as well as the river Ebro, were so named after *Iberus* the son of *Tubal*; and from his descendants *Brigus* and *Tagus*, the Portuguese cities, *Conimbriga* or Coimbra, and *Brigancia* or Braganza, and also the river Tagus, must consequently have derived their names.

The

The æra of the reign of Lucius in this country is fixed at 1509 years before Christ. After him the tract of country comprehended between the river Guadiana and Douro, now called Portugal, was named for many centuries Lusitania.

Ancient Lusitania is thought to have been nearly equal in size to the present kingdom of Portugal; for though the former extended more towards the East than the latter does, yet it extended less towards the North; so that the territory Portugal has gained from Gallicia and Andaluzia is equal to what it has lost of ancient Lusitania.

In order to account for the etymology of Lisbon, it was found necessary to introduce Ulysses hither in one of his peregrinations. He entered the river Tagus with part of the Grecian fleet, on being driven by storm from the Streights of Gibraltar. In honour of him the Capital was called *Ulyssipo*, since corrupted to *Lisbon*.

Among others it is related, that vast numbers of Tyreans migrated to Lusitania, after their city had been destroyed by Alexander the Great. The town now called Mertola was founded by them, and named Mirtiri; that is to say, New Tyre. However that was, it is pretty certain that the Phœnicians traded, about this time, or earlier, with Spain; Cadiz was in their possession, and also a fortified town in the province of Andaluzia; which, in honour of their native country, they named *Sidon*, the same that is now called Medina Sidonia. About the same time multitudes of the Celtæ (ancient inha-

bitants of Gaul) overspread the southern parts of Lusitania, where they settled with their flocks; these were called the Lusitanian Celts, in contradistinction to the Celts of Spain.

Whilst the Celts and Phœnicians lorded it over Spain and Lusitania, came Nebuchadnezer, and attempted to conquer the latter. But failing in the attempt, he abandoned the country, leaving behind him multitudes of Israelites; and thus they account for the origin of the Jews in Spain and Portugal.

Before the Christian æra 318 years, *Gathelus* and his family are said to have sailed from Egypt, and arrived in the city of Oporto. This same *Gathelus* had two sons, *Humecus* and *Hiberus*; the latter of whom, according to the Portuguese and Spanish antiquaries, sailed from Oporto towards Ireland; and they conjecture that it was from him the country obtained the name *Hibernia*.

The Carthagenians were the next that entered Spain. *Hamilcar*, one of the most celebrated generals of that commonwealth, was sent thither with a mighty army. In a short time he rendered himself master of the country; passed into Lusitania, which he also subdued; and at length conquered from the Streights of Gibraltar to the Pyrenean mountains. This happened about 230 years before the Christian æra. The famous *Hannibal* (son of this *Hamilcar* by a Lusitanian woman) accompanied his father in that victorious expedition; and therein acquired the rudiments of that military skill which afterwards rendered him so formidable to the Romans.

The

The Africans, after lording it over these countries for the space of 300 years, were at last expelled by the Romans. The progress of the latter, in Spain and Portugal, may be collected from the ancient writers, and from the medals, coins, and inscriptions relating to their consuls, generals, and emperors, which still remain. From these documents we learn that Lusitania did not acknowledge the sovereignty of Rome, till long after Spain was annexed to her empire. Under the successive commands of Viriatus and Sertorius, the Lucians defended their country with great valour; but after the death of these brave generals, it became a province of Rome, in the reign of Augustus Cæsar.

When this Emperor issued his memorable decree from Tarragon in Spain for numbering the inhabitants of his empire, in order to levy a capitation tax, the population of Lusitania was rated at 5,068,000 souls. It is not reasonable to suppose that these were heads of families, as some writers have ventured to assert.

The fatal overthrow of the rest of the Roman empire prepared a succession of new masters for Lusitania. In the year of our Lord 405, it yielded to the irresistible power of the Alans and Suevians, whose dominion lasted till the year 585; then came the Goths, and established their dominion on the ruins of the two former.

Of the transactions of Portugal under the first Gothic kings, very little are preserved that can be depended on; like the primitive part of the Lusitanian history, it is enveloped in

fable and obscurity. It may indeed very properly be called the age of darkness; both from the general ignorance of the times, and the barbarous custom which then obtained among the great, of putting out the eyes of such as were obnoxious to them.

In the year of Christ 714, during the reign of Roderick, the last of the Gothic kings, the Moors invaded Spain. Julian, an Italian nobleman, conducted them thither through revenge, in consequence of his daughter having been dishonoured by Roderick. They passed from Africa across the Streights of Gibraltar, and landed on the Spanish coast with an army of 200,000 infantry, and 40,000 cavalry; under the command of the Caliph *Valid Almanzor*. The army of Roderick scarcely amounted to half that number; he engaged the enemy, however, with great valour. During seven days successively the battle continued; on the eighth day the Moors gained a decided victory; and in eight months after they subdued the whole country, which cost the Spaniards eight hundred years to recover again. Hence it was remarked, that the number eight had been very inauspicious to the monarchy of Spain.

King Roderick, having narrowly escaped falling into the hands of the enemy, fled to the mountains, and exchanged his apparel with a shepherd. In this habit he came to a monastery on the banks of the river Guadiana, where he was recognised by one Romanus a monk, who accompanied him into Portugal. Here they took up their abode on the side of a mountain verging on the shore, near the town of Pedrogao, and ended their days in solitary caves. It is recorded that in rebuilding

rebuilding this town, in the reign of Alonso the First, there was discovered among the ruins a tomb of rude workmanship, bearing this inscription:

HIC REQUIESCIT RUDERICUS

ULTIMUS REX GOTHORUM.

No sooner had the Moors made themselves masters of Spain, than they penetrated into Lusitania; and subdued it from one extreme to the other. The governors appointed by Valid Almanzor, after his death, cast off all subjection to the Caliph who succeeded him, and assumed the power of sovereign princes. Many of the generals declared themselves independent likewise; so that in a short time Portugal had as many kings as cities.

The natives, at first, were shewn every indulgence that could be expected by a conquered people; they were held eligible to all offices, civil and military; allowed the free exercise of their religion, and treated in all other respects in a manner that evinced the good policy and civilization of the enemy.

This harmony, however, was soon interrupted by the quarrels that ensued among the usurpers; the natives were insulted, and their property violated. Roused at last to a due sense of their oppression, they conspired, in imitation of the Spaniards, to regain their hereditary possessions; then began the feuds and animosities, that led to mutual acts of cruelty horrid to contemplate. From this period till the close of the eleventh century, the history of the Moorish dominion in Portugal furnishes

nishes very little worthy the attention of a rational mind; every page of it being stained with narratives of devastation, thick sown with ridiculous miracles and fables.

Palagius, a general of great abilities, was the first who began the restoration in Spain. He was nearly related to the unfortunate Roderick, and fought at the memorable battle at which that King lost his crown. When the Gothic army was overthrown, he made his escape to the mountains of Asturia, where he was proclaimed King by a few Christians who accompanied him. From this humble state he advanced by degrees, and founded the kingdom of Leon. He died A. D. 737.

The Castilians, animated by the success of Palagius, continued the wars with the Moors under a series of brave princes. After expelling the Infidels from the greatest part of Spain, they penetrated into Portugal, and conquered a great part of it, in the reign of Don Alfonso VI. King of Castile and Leon. From this period the history of Portugal begins to assume a more authentic semblance. The first luminary of this new epocha was

COUNT HENRY.

This illustrious nobleman, to whom Portugal is indebted for the foundation of its monarchy, was grandson of Robert the first Duke of Burgundy. Zealous to distinguish himself in the wars between the Christians and Infidels, he passed into Spain and entered into the service of Alfonso VI. of Castile. After signalizing his valour in different engagements, the King raised him to the highest military rank; and the better to attach

so brave an officer to his service, he gave him his natural daughter Terefa in marriage. In consequence of this alliance Henry was made sole proprietor of all the lands in Portugal whence he had expelled the Moors; and from the year 1091 till his death, which happened in 1112, in the 77th of his age, he resided in the country as governor thereof, with the title of Earl.

A short time before his death, he is said to have recommended to his successor, to protect and propagate the Christian faith; to treat his subjects as his children; to be careful in giving them good laws; to cause the said laws to be well executed; and to protect the poor from the oppression of the rich. His remains are interred in the Cathedral of Braga, beneath a magnificent monument, erected in the year 1513, by the Archbishop of the diocese. But the inscription is full of errors respecting the country, parentage, and actions of the defunct.

C H A P. XXX.

ANECDOTES of the Kings of PORTUGAL.

ALFONSO I.

ALFONSO inherited from Count Henry his father but a small portion of the territory which Portugal comprehends at present. The principal part of the province of Estremadura was possessed by a Moorish prince named Ismar, whom he resolved to attack. The latter, being apprised of the preparations of the Infant of Portugal, (*Alfonso* had no other title at that time,) formed a league with four other Moorish princes of inferior note, whereby he raised a powerful army; the most moderate of the Portuguese historians computes it at 300,000 men, whereas the army of *Alfonso* did not exceed 30,000. The two armies met in the plains of Ourique. Here *Alfonso*, by the unanimous voice of his troops, was proclaimed *King of Portugal*. In the mean time a miracle was conjured up in his favour, which had the desired effect of stimulating the ardour of his troops; thus animated, he led them on, and gained a complete victory.

The five escutcheons azure, each charged with five bezants argent, which the arms of Portugal bear to this day, are the monument of this victory, being in commemoration of the
five

five Moorish kings who were slain, and of the five wounds *Alfonso* had received on that memorable day.

Such was the commencement of the Portuguese monarchy; celebrated for its conquests in the New World, and not less distinguished in the Old, for having, in the small space it occupies in Europe, maintained its independence against the Crown of Castile; whilst all other parts of the peninsula of Hispania sunk under its powerful dominion.

In the archives of the convent of Alcobaca there is an old record, said to be written by King *Alfonso*, wherein an account of the miracle supposed to have occurred previous to the above battle is attested upon his Majesty's oath. The Spanish critics, however, have detected so many absurdities in it, as leave no doubt that the whole is a forgery; to mention but one, it bears the date of the year of our Lord, although the Christian era was not for many ages after adopted in Portugal. The Portuguese historians, on the other hand, contend, that this ancient instrument, notwithstanding its glaring inconsistencies, is an unerring monument of the divine origin of their monarchy, charging with impiety all who dare to contest its authenticity; and indeed none but those prompted by vanity can find any gratification in disturbing a delusion so pleasing to those interested in believing it. But, independent of miraculous agency, all historians allow that the talents and valour of *Alfonso* justly entitled him to a crown.

The Portuguese prosecuted successfully the war against the Infidels, rapidly extending their conquests along the sea-coast; every part surrendered at the approach of the victorious King; who,

who, during his reign, had the good fortune to conquer almost the whole of Portugal; and to give the dominion of the Moors therein the fatal blow, from which they never after recovered.

Alfonso, however, in his contest with the King of Leon was not equally successful; he was besieged by that Prince, in the year 1169, at the town of Badajoz, and seeing it impossible to hold out, he determined to force his way through the enemy; but he advanced with such precipitation, that he broke his leg against a bar which lay across the gate of the fortress. He was made prisoner, and conducted before the King of Leon, who liberated him on condition that he would deliver up some places he possessed in Gallicia, acknowledge himself vassal of the Crown of Leon, and engage to assist at the meetings of the states-general, provided his wound permitted him to ride on horseback. The last condition *Alfonso* evaded by travelling ever after on foot, or in a vehicle; and he found reasons equally cogent to evade the second injunction. *Alfonso* died at Coimbra, in the year 1185, at the age of 76, having reigned 57 years.

SANCHO I.

This Prince ascended the throne in the thirty-first year of his age. If the numerous acts of justice and beneficence ascribed to him be true, he must have had the happiness of his subjects very much at heart. It is allowed by all that he assiduously encouraged population, agriculture, and trade; he rebuilt and repaired several churches and fortresses that had been demolished or dilapidated by the Moors, and founded many towns and villages throughout the kingdom; hence he obtained the surname of *the Populator and Father of his Country*.

His

His courage in the field, and knowledge of military affairs, were not inferior to those of his father, though his victories were not so many nor so brilliant, owing to the powerful reinforcements the enemy received from Africa; besides, he had various calamities to encounter, which no human wisdom could calculate or prevent; as inundations, earthquakes, and famine. In the mean time the grandees quarrelled among themselves, and dissensions arose among the ecclesiastics. All this, says a Portuguese historian, was foreshewn by a solar eclipse.

Sancho appears to have had no fixed place of residence; for during his absence from the camp he was constantly inspecting the different parts of his kingdom, and occupied in encouraging industry, relieving the oppressed, abolishing bad customs, or reconciling the disputes of his people. In point of œconomy he has been equalled by none of his successors, though he always supported the character of a generous Prince. Without oppressing his subjects with new taxes or contributions, he left in his coffers at his death the sum of 700,000 crowns, 1400 marks of plate, and 100 of gold. Of this treasure, he ordained in his will, that Alfonso, his eldest son and successor to the crown, should have but 200 marks of gold, and that the residue should be divided equally among the rest of his children. His remains were deposited near those of his father in the church of the Holy Cross at Coimbra. About four hundred years after, the body was found uncorrupted, and placed in a new tomb made by order of King Emanuel.

ALFONSO II.

The biographers of this Prince reproach him with having tarnished the first years of his reign by acts of injustice towards the Infantas his sisters, depriving them of the patrimony bequeathed to them by their father. Pope Innocent III. interposed in their behalf, but in vain; the sword prevailed over right and spiritual admonition.

In the year 1217, he obtained a signal victory over the combined forces of the Moors at the siege of Alcazar do Sal, with the assistance of a number of German and Flemish crusaders, who were driven by stress of weather into Setuval, in their voyage to Palestine. A few days previous to the victory a group of Angels, carrying the Holy Cross, were seen in the air. This was a repetition of the stratagem used by Alfonso I. who also was a servile copyist. The latter, however, is doubted by all, whereas that of Alfonso I. is generally credited by the Portuguese, though supported by evidence equally as fallacious as the other. Every great victory in those days was presaged by some miracle *in nubibus*.

The King of Castile proposed an interview with *Alfonso II.* who returned for answer, "The too great credulity of persons of my rank, upon similar occasions, have taught me to be cautious lest I share their fate; I accept, however, of the conference, provided it be held upon the frontiers of both kingdoms, and in a place of safety for one and the other." His remains are interred in the monastery of Alcobaça, in a plain tomb. Faria says, that none of the tombs of the primitive kings of Portugal had either epitaph or inscription.

SANCHO II.

In the year 1223 this Prince ascended the throne, in the twenty-first year of his age. His first step was to redress the grievances of the clergy, and make his peace with the Pope; in consequence of which his Holiness revoked the interdict he laid on the kingdom in the reign of Alfonso II. and the Christians who died whilst it remained in force were now disinterred and reburied in consecrated ground.

Sancho II. was reputed an able general and statesman during the first fourteen years of his reign, though he is represented by some historians as insane; others, however, aver that his only insanity consisted in reposing too much confidence in his ministers and favourites; who, by their oppressive measures, alienated the affections of his subjects, and betrayed him at the end. The clergy, thinking themselves aggrieved likewise, gladly seized the opportunity of uniting with the people to oppose the King. The Queen was represented as the instrument of all their grievances; and, according to the superstition of the age, she was believed to have disturbed his senses by an enchanted draught. In short, by the intrigues of the different parties, seconded by the Earl of Bologne, the King's brother, and Pope Innocent IV., *Sancho* was deposed, and died soon after at Toledo. The beautiful Queen *Dona Mencia* was made prisoner, conveyed away privately by one Raymond Portocarrero, and was never heard of more.

ALFONSO III.

Don Alfonso, Earl of Bologne, second son of Alfonso II. was at Paris when his brother Sancho was deposed; a messenger was sent to acquaint him that he was appointed regent of Portugal, on condition that he would subscribe to and swear to maintain certain articles, relating principally to the privileges of the clergy and nobility, which he did accordingly, and returned to his native country; but thought no more about the articles except to violate them. He issued an edict commanding all the governors within his kingdom to deliver up the fortresses and other places of defence committed to their trust by the late King. Some obeyed the mandate, whilst others faithfully held out for Don Sancho; yet the latter he honoured and rewarded, whilst the former were considered by him as traitors. At the death of his brother he was crowned King of Portugal.

This was the first Sovereign that took the title of *King of Portugal and Algarve*. The boundaries of the kingdom were marked out by his orders. The Moors were wholly exterminated by him from Portugal; fairs established, commerce protected, and the highways cleared of robbers. Under him the sciences began to dawn; he invited and patronized several men of letters, particularly from France; so that Portugal produced some learned men in his reign, among whom is reckoned Pope John XXI., who was born at Lisbon. Indeed, *Alfonso III.* appears to be the most enlightened of the Portuguese kings hitherto. As all his predecessors had supernomen, he desired to be called *the Patron of the Poor*; a title which, however,

ever, did not attach to him, although he justly merited the distinction; for in a year of scarcity of corn he disposed of his treasure, even to the jewels of his crown, to provide them sustenance. The worst trait in his character was incontinency. Before he was appointed regent, he was married in France to Matilda Countess of Bologne, whom he forsook for Beatrix natural daughter of Alfonso X. of Castile.

DINIZ I.

King *Diniz* I., who succeeded his father at the age of nineteen, commenced his reign with an act which is highly censured by the Spanish historians, and as highly applauded by the Portuguese; he excluded Queen Beatrix, his mother, from any share in the government, telling her at the same time that women were never destined by Providence to rule over men.

Agreeably to the custom of his predecessors, he visited the different provinces of his kingdom, and after returning to the seat of government, occupied his time in correcting the abuses he had observed in his journey. Accordingly several laws were enacted in favour of the peasantry and landholders; and new regulations made for abridging the duration of law-suits, and preventing litigation. Commissaries were deputed to examine the titles of those who usurped the name and quality of nobles. And agriculture, which the Prince properly considered as the vital of the state, was re-established, and the cultivators thereof were protected and honoured with such particular marks of favour, that he obtained the title of *the Husbandman*.

Having

Having thus excited a spirit of industry throughout the state, his revenues increased beyond all former example. But instead of hording up his treasure, or squandering it in ambitious and destructive wars, he expended it in works of real national utility; in agriculture, literary foundations, fortifications, arsenals, and in strengthening his navy. The people seeing the vast sums of money he expended, were at a loss to account for the source of his wealth; certain it is, that a great part of it arose from his domestic œconomy, and the fleets of crusaders from all parts of Europe, which traded to his ports in their passage to and from the Holy-Land. From these adventurers, who had intercourse with the Archipelago, and the ports of Greece, Syria, and Egypt, the Portuguese are supposed to have acquired the first idea of commerce upon a comprehensive scale.

The career of this great Prince, unlike that of his predecessors, is unstained by the blood of Arabian hosts: except a few unimportant skirmishes with the Castillians, his reign was undisturbed by foreign enemies. Indeed Alfonso, his eldest son, was the greatest enemy to his repose and the tranquillity of the nation. This restless Prince, whose course, from youth to age, was stained with vice, conspired, at different times, to seize the reins of government, which compelled the King to arm more than once against him and his deluded partisans. These civil broils were at length terminated by the mediation of Isabella the Queen. A great portion of the happiness of Portugal during this reign is ascribed to that amiable Princess, the daughter of Peter III. King of Arragon. She is represented as one of the most beautiful and accomplished women of her time; and one peculiarly blessed with the happy

talent of assuaging discontents. Isabella is now venerated as a saint, by a nation which she formerly edified with her virtues.

In the year 1325 King *Deniz* terminated his glorious reign, in the sixty-fourth year of his age, having swayed the sceptre forty-six years. He is interred in the monastery of Ovidelas, in a magnificent tomb built by his order. His loss was severely felt by all his subjects, who venerated him as a sovereign and loved him as a parent. It is said of him, that he was a great king, a fortunate husband, but an unhappy father.

ALFONSO IV.

This Prince, who manifested so much impatience to wrest the sceptre from the hand of his father, no sooner ascended the throne, than he abandoned the duties of the crown for the pleasure of the chase. Not satisfied with having persecuted his brother Don Sanches, and obliged him to seek refuge in a foreign kingdom, he now falsely accuses him of high-treason; and after a mock trial had him proscribed, and his possessions confiscated.

The catastrophe of Dona Ignez de Castro forms a principal scene in the last stage of this Monarch's reign. This beautiful but unfortunate lady was the daughter of a Castilian gentleman who sought refuge at the court of Portugal; her charms having attracted the affections of Don Pedro, the heir-apparent to the crown, he was privately married to her. The sycophants who surrounded the throne, incensed at the preference

H H

given

given to a lady of her inferior rank, persuaded the King that her death was necessary to the welfare of the state; in consequence of which the amiable Ignez was brutally murdered in his presence; a transaction which he avowed as if he had done nothing of which he ought to be ashamed.

The character of *Alfonso* is given in a few words: "He was an undutiful son, an unnatural brother, and a cruel father; a great and fortunate warrior, diligent in the execution of the laws, and a Machiavelian politician. That good might be obtained by villanous means was his favourite maxim." This was the King that entered Seville in triumphal procession, preceded by the clergy of that city chaunting *Benedictus qui venit in nomine Domini*. He died in the year 1357, aged sixty-six; not much regretted by his subjects, who always respected him, but never loved him. He took for his device a spread eagle, with this motto, *Altiora peto*.

PEDRO I.

succeeded his father on the throne in the thirty-seventh year of his age. His first care was to ratify a peace with the Crown of Castile, which continued inviolate to the end of his reign; nor do we find that the sword was unsheathed during his government against either foreign or domestic foe, except in the execution of the civil law. Pursuant to his treaty with Castile, two of the courtiers concerned in the murder of his mistress, who had taken refuge in that kingdom, were delivered up to him, and sacrificed to the manes of his beloved Ignez. Having thus far appeased his revenge, he had her
corse

corse taken out of the tomb and invested with regal robes; with his own hands he put the royal crown on her head. The singularity of the ceremony gave rise to the observation, "Igneze de Castro ascended from the tomb to the throne, and "reigned after she had ceased to live."

King *Pedro* had a great passion for a kind of dance or revelry, called in the Portuguese language *Folia*. In this diversion he would often pass a great part of the night, among his children, and such persons of the court as he honoured with his confidence. The music is composed of voices and flutes, with airs alternately quick and slow; and as the motions of the dancers are coincident, they appear to be either in frantic fits or lucid intervals.

The qualities for which King *Pedro* was most celebrated, were liberality and justice. From his zeal to protect the laws, however, he sometimes launched into severity unworthy of an impartial judge; yet these instances are too few to invalidate his claim to the title of a just and equitable Prince, since there are numerous instances of his having administered justice with one hand, and mercy with the other. In his disposition he was gay and sprightly, affable and easy of access; delighted in music and dancing, and a lover of learning. He died in the year 1367, in the forty-sixth year of his age, having reigned but nine years.

FERNANDO I.

In the twenty-seventh year of his age, *Fernando* succeeded his father; his administration at first engaged the affections of his subjects, and gave them strong assurances of prosperity under his reign. But he soon disappointed their expectations and forfeited their esteem, by his prodigality and rashness. Pretending a right to the crown of Castile, he exhausted the treasures left by his predecessors, in preparations to invade that kingdom, and to gain partisans to his cause; yet, in the prosecution of the enterprise, he displayed such want of courage and abilities, that he lost the confidence of his people, and brought the nation to the verge of ruin. In this dilemma he thought to repair his finances by raising the value of specie; a measure which, instead of repairing, only widened the breach. At last he was relieved in some degree from his embarrassment, by concluding a dishonourable treaty of peace with his adversary. Agreeably to an article of the treaty, he was espoused, by proxy, to Dona Leonora, daughter of the King of Castile; although he had been previously affianced to the King of Arragon's daughter; regardless however of faith with both, he took away and married Leonora de Telez, the wife of a Portuguese nobleman, who now sought refuge in Castile; "and there," says Faria, "publicly wore a pair of golden horns." This unfortunate King lived forty-four years; seventeen of which he reigned. A Spanish historian has given this laconic character of him: *A King below mediocrity, and a man without courage.*

JOHN I.

This Prince was the natural son of Pedro I. by Dona Teresa Lorenza, a Gallician lady. He was declared Regent in the twenty-seventh year of his age; and the succeeding year was elected King of Portugal. The nation prospered under him, and no longer felt the dire effects of civil commotions or foreign invasions after the victorious battle of Aljubarrota, wherein he humbled the pride of the Castilians, and crowned his fame. Under his reign commenced the happy age of the Portuguese monarchy; which at no former period produced such eminent generals and statesmen. The kingdom now emerged from obscurity, and was respected by the neighbouring states. He introduced the Christian æra into Portugal, and enacted several wholesome laws in favour of the industrious part of the community. Indeed, some historians say, that he had the Justinian code of laws translated into the Portuguese language; but of this there is no decided proof. It may be collected, however, from the prologue to the ordinations of Alfonso, that he ordered the several existing laws of the nation to be collected into a code, which order was not completed till the reign of Alfonso V. This code is now called the *Alfonfinas ordinations*.

King *John* was married to Philippa, daughter of the Duke of Lancaster. His affection for her made him cultivate a friendship with the English, whose assistance he often experienced. In honour of Edward III. of England, he named his successor to the throne Edward.

According

According to the Portuguese writers, *King John I.* was a Knight of the Garter; his name, however, does not appear in the list of the knights of that order; yet the assertion is not without foundation, since the *insignia* of the order is represented in sculpture among the *regalia* on his tomb, in the beautiful mausoleum of Batalha. These writers farther add, that he took for his crest a dragon's head, and taught his people, in imitation of the English, when engaged in battle, to call on Saint George. His device was a sword piercing a rock, with this motto, *Acut ut penetrat*; he points that he may pierce. He died in 1435, in the seventy-sixth year of his age, and forty-eighth of his reign. The English court performed funeral obsequies in honour of him.

EDWARD I.

The day appointed for the coronation of King Edward, which was the 15th of August 1433, a Jewish doctor, celebrated for his knowledge of judicial astrology, came to beseech him to defer the ceremony till after mid-day, to avoid the conjunction of an inauspicious constellation which then presided in the heavens. King *Edward*, however, who was well versed in mathematics, and consequently knew the fallacy of the doctor's prediction, treated the admonition with contempt; and, notwithstanding the respect then paid to conjurations of this kind, he ordered the ceremony to be performed at the hour appointed. A few years after the nation was ravaged with a plague, to avoid which Edward fled to the country, but in vain; here, on opening a letter sent from the capital, he

was instantly seized with that pestilence, and died a few days after, in the forty-sixth year of his age, and the fifth of his reign.

King *Edward* was a lover of letters, and invited into Portugal some of the most celebrated sages of the age. There is extant, of his, a treatise upon the fidelity of friends; another upon the administration of public justice; and a work intitled "The Good Counsellor;" which he dedicated to Leonora his consort. He had a daughter named Leonora, who was affianced to the Emperor Maximilian, grandfather to the celebrated Charles V. Don John de Menezes, a Portuguese gentleman, was so passionately in love with this Princess, that after her marriage he became inconsolable; and retired to a Franciscan convent at Montorio near Rome, where he passed the remainder of his days.

ALFONSO V.

The sceptre devolved to *Alfonso* V. when he was but six years of age; Prince Pedro, son of John I. was appointed regent; the young Prince having attained the age of fourteen, he resigned the government up to him, and gave an exact account of his administration; which is allowed to have been directed by wisdom and justice. From the excellent precepts of so eminent a statesman, much was to be expected from the government of the young King; yet almost every public act of his reign was noted for rashness and folly. Instigated by the calumny of some of his favourites, his first step was to put the brave Don Pedro, his uncle, preceptor, and father-in-law,

law, to death; leaving the world to regret the fate of one of the greatest generals, politicians, and travellers of the age.

In the year 1470 *Alfonso* embarked in an expedition to Africa; and partly redeemed his losses in that country by the capture of Arzilla and Tangiers. Hence he was surnamed the African, and added to his title *King of both Algarves*.

He passed into France to solicit aid of Lewis XI. to invade Castile. This Monarch met *Alfonso* at Bourgos, and received him very courteously; thence they went to Paris; after waiting there a considerable time, he discovered the folly of confiding in the politic Lewis. Thus disappointed and chagrined, he repaired to his fleet at Harfleur, and fell into a deep melancholy; to return home, after his miscarriage, he was ashamed; and expected every hour Lewis's mandate to detain him prisoner. In this distracted state, he resolved to pass the remainder of his days in the Holy Land; and accordingly set out privately, accompanied by a chaplain and four servants. Lewis being apprised of his departure, dispatched a party of his officers in pursuit of him; they overtook him, and presented him a letter from their sovereign, exhorting him to return home; which *Alfonso*, with little difficulty, acceded to.

Agreeably to his desire, Prince John his son was proclaimed King in his absence; but as soon as his father arrived in Lisbon, he resigned the government up to him.

A treaty of peace was now set on foot between Portugal and Castile. Ambassadors from both kingdoms held different meetings

meetings to settle the preliminaries, but in vain. *Alfonso*, weary of procrastination, had recourse to a singular expedient; he dispatched one of his ministers to the King of Castile with a die, on one side of which was engraved the word PEACE, on the opposite side WAR. The Castilian Sovereign having agreed to terminate the contest in this manner, the die was cast and displayed its peaceful face. Hereupon a treaty of peace was concluded between both kingdoms for the space of one hundred and one years; and it happened to be executed to the letter, it being just one hundred and one years after when Philip II. declared war against Portugal.

Alfonso V. in the year 1480, called a meeting of the ecclesiastics, nobles, commons, and knights of the different military orders of the kingdom. In this assembly he rose up and minutely recounted the errors of his government, in contrition for which, he declared his intention of passing the remainder of his days in a convent at Cintra. Upon this he presented the sceptre to Prince John his son, and had himself divested of the regal robes, amidst the tears and remonstrances of his subjects. He had not, however, the satisfaction to enter into the solitude he proposed; in his journey from Lisbon to Cintra, after having abdicated his throne, he was seized, on the road, with a violent fever, of which he died a few days after, in the forty-ninth year of his age.

The first library known in the Royal palace of Portugal, was collected by order of *Alfonso V.* He invited to his court a learned Italian divine named Justo, whom he promoted to a bishopric, with the obligation of writing a Latin history of Portugal. Unfortunately the prelate died before his labours

were given to the public; and all he had composed, together with his valuable materials, were irretrievably lost by the negligence of posterity.

JOHN II.

It has been observed of Alfonso V. that he was a better man than a King; and of *John II.* that he was a better King than a man. Taught by the misfortunes of his father's reign, that too much confidence in ministers and favourites is the source of calamities to a nation, he resolved to banish all private friendship from the throne.

The most remarkable occurrences in the reign of this illustrious Prince are, the voyages and discoveries made under his auspices; an ample account of which may be seen in the histories of the Portuguese discoveries in Africa. He was so jealous of monopolizing the whole trade of the coast of Guinea, that he took every opportunity of exaggerating the dangers and difficulties of sailing on that coast. He even caused a report to be propagated, that he lost considerably by his enterprises, in consequence of the dreadful tempests to which that coast was subject; that the air was pestilential, the country sterile, and inhabited by anthropophagi; that three ships out of every five sent thither had perished; and that no vessels but those of a certain construction, known only to the Portuguese, could possibly sail there.

A certain pilot, better versed in navigation than politics, expressed his surprise at these reports, saying, that he would
8 undertake

undertake to sail to the coast of Guinea in a common fishing-boat. The King sent for this pilot, and *convinced* him that he did not understand the difficulties attending the voyage. After this the pilot acted his part so well, that the King handsomely rewarded him.

Three Portuguese navigators intending to pass into Castile to inform that court of the affairs of Guinea, were stopped on the frontiers, where two of them were killed. The other was brought back prisoner, and condemned to die. King *John* understanding the seafaring people murmured at this, said, "Any of my mariners that dare attempt to sail by land, shall experience a similar fate."

A Portuguese pilot named Cano, returning to Lisbon after discovering the kingdom of Congo, represented to his Majesty that gold was very plenty in that country, but he could not persuade the inhabitants to shew him the mines whence it was drawn. "Well," replied the King, "treat the people kindly, trade with them upon fair terms, let your commodities be such as will please them, and you will bring home the riches of their mines without the trouble of working them."

In the month of March 1493, the celebrated Christopher Columbus entered the port of Lisbon, after his first voyage to America. King *John* II. now repented his having rejected the former proposals of that great man. Some persons, thinking his presence was obnoxious to the King, offered to kill him; but Don *John*, much to his honour, treated the offer with merited abhorrence; sent for Columbus, received him very

courteously, and shewed him every civility and honour whilst he remained at Lisbon.

On hearing that the people expressed their surprise at seeing Don John de Menezes raised from an inferior department to one of the first offices of the crown, the King observed, "Menezes has one great quality that entitles him to distinction; he is a lover of truth, which he always has had the courage to tell me, even at the risk of displeasing me."

On seeing a criminal led to the place of execution, on whom sentence had been passed fourteen years back, he ordered him to be set at liberty, saying, "they better deserve death who suffered the man to remain so long in prison under sentence of execution."

King *John II.* had one natural son, named Don George, to whom he attempted in vain to leave the crown, to the exclusion of Don Emanuel Duke of Beja, his cousin, brother-in-law, and legitimate heir to the throne. One day, as he felt himself very weak towards the close of his life, he ordered Don Antonio de Faria, secretary of state, to fill up the blank left in his will with the name of Don George. Don Faria had the courage to represent that it would be injurious to the glory of his reign and the tranquillity of the nation, if Don George, without friends or support, should be nominated in preference to a Prince who was his legitimate successor, brother to the Queen, allied to all the monarchs of Europe; beloved by the great, adored by the people, and supported with all the forces of Castile. The King, struck with the fidelity and force of his statement, ordered him to write Emanuel in the blank; and
henceforth

henceforth treated this Prince as he had long merited by his prudence and moderation. Don *John*, it is supposed, died in consequence of poison, in the year 1495.

EMANUEL I.

the most fortunate and renowned of all the Portuguese Sovereigns, was born in the year 1469, on *Corpus Christi* day, just as the blessed sacrament was carrying in procession by the palace door; and hence he was named *Emanuel*. The victories and conquests of the Portuguese in Asia and Africa during his reign, the pitch of greatness to which the kingdom aspired by his acts and councils, together with the number and magnificence of his public institutions and regulations, have justly entitled him to the surname of *the Great and Fortunate*. He ascended the throne in the twenty-sixth year of his age.

From his early youth, he is said to have been devoted to study; and sought every opportunity of conversing with men of information, particularly upon subjects of geography, voyages, and discoveries. King John II. his predecessor, admired him more on account of his talents, than from all the ties of consanguinity; and, as if anticipating his future greatness, he added an armillary sphere to his escutcheon of arms, a symbol which appears to have inspired him with a passion for voyages and discoveries, for in three years after his coronation the celebrated Vasco da Gama displayed his banners in India. He preserved a strict friendship with Henry VIII. of England, who married Catherine, sister to the Queen of Portugal. The British Monarch sent him the order of the garter in the year 1511.

Emanuel

Emanuel was a Prince of the greatest temperance, benevolence, and humanity. His reign was the golden age of Portugal; for the riches and precious commodities of India and Africa flowed into it. He ordered a calculation to be made of the number of ships which arrived annually at Lisbon from India during the last twenty years of his reign, laden with pepper, cloves, sugar, cocoa, camphire, saltpetre, gold, pearls, diamonds, &c.; they were found to amount, on an average, to thirteen. In the administration of public justice he was indefatigable; he generally rose very early, and heard divine service before he proceeded to business. Every Friday he fasted on bread and water; never tasted wine or oil; and yet, though abstemious, his table was superbly elegant and sumptuous. When he dined in public, his guests were generally learned men, or intelligent travellers; with whom he was wont to converse in the most easy and agreeable manner. He held it as a maxim that the surest way of obtaining information, is to ask questions unawares, and to hear the answers with apparent indifference. In the affairs of Europe he never interfered, nor affected to be a politician; yet a politician he certainly was, and a good one. Every day he went abroad, he put on a new suit of clothes; and was preceded by elephants and other foreign animals, and bands of music. He loved hunting, feasting, and dancing; and kept several eminent musicians in the palace, who played concerts each day whilst he transacted business with his ministers.

As to his person, he was rather tall and thin, his forehead high, had dark brown hair and green eyes. Like Artaxerxes Longimanus, his arms were remarkably long, insomuch that his fingers, when he stood upright, reached below his knees.

JOHN III.

In the year 1521, six days after the demise of Emanuel, was Prince *John* proclaimed King. Although his father took every care of his education, yet, through want of application, he was found, at an adult age, ignorant of the first rudiments of letters. The Queen his mother would often tell him that nothing is so disgraceful in man as ignorance, especially in a Prince, whose personal merit is the firmest basis of his throne.

King Emanuel, finding him averse from study, had him, from the age of ten, to assist constantly at the deliberations of his councils. Flattered by this distinction, the young Prince renounced all other pursuits, even the amusements proper to his age, for the study of politics; by which he soon became an able statesman.

King *John*, notwithstanding, was much attached to men of letters; he used to say, "These are the men who serve the state, and honour it at the same time." His memory was so retentive, that he has been compared to Cyrus, to Simonides, to Themistocles, and the Emperor Frederick I.; to whom history attributes this talent in an eminent degree. It is said, that on hearing the catalogue of the students read at the university of Coimbra, he passed into the lecture hall and called over every name.

The rich fleets which annually arrived at Lisbon from the Eastern world, invited many strangers to his kingdom; some
of

of whom are supposed to have attempted to propagate doctrines hostile to the established religion. On this account, and to check the progress of Judaism, at the instance of the clergy, he established the Inquisition, in the year 1534, contrary to the repeated supplications of his lay-subjects. This, perhaps, is the only public act of his reign that deserves severe reprehension: and though his character, on the whole, falls very short of that of his two immediate predecessors, yet, in almost every quality that constitutes a good King, he left his two successors at an immense distance behind. He terminated his career in the year 1557, and with him terminated the happy æra of the Portuguese monarchy.

SEBASTIAN I.

This Prince was grandson of the late King John III. whose crown he inherited at three years of age. The Portuguese entertained the most lively hopes of his future greatness from the happy disposition he manifested in his youth, and the fine talents he displayed as he advanced in years. To a penetrating and comprehensive mind, he added the most heroic virtues. Yet, with these admirable qualities, he became the dupe of intriguing courtiers, suborned, as it is supposed, by the court of Spain, who plunged himself and his country into an abyss of destruction.

To his education are ascribed all those misfortunes. His two principal tutors, namely, Don *Alexis de Menezes*, a nobleman, and Don *Lewis de Camara*, a Jesuit, proposed to make him the greatest of heroes. The Nobleman was constantly
recounting

recounting to him the brilliant victories his ancestors had obtained: the Jesuit, on the other hand, impressed him with an idea that to destroy Infidels and propagate the Holy Gospel were the most glorious duties of a Christian Prince. These sentiments of heroism and devotion were so strongly inculcated in his tender mind, that before the age of eighteen he became one of the most complete knight-errants of the age.

Of his frantic adventures take the following instances:—At a late hour one night he sallied out of the palace of Cintra to a neighbouring forest in quest of wild boars. His attendants pursued him, and with much difficulty found him in the thick of the wood struggling with a madman.

At another time he gave orders to the commanders of the fortresses of St. Julian and Belem, which guard the entrance of the harbour of Lisbon, to suffer no vessel to pass. Next day he embarked privately in a galley, and under full sail passed by these two fortresses, amidst showers of bullets.

In the year 1574, under pretence of going out a-hunting, he embarked suddenly in a small vessel, and set sail for Africa; to the amazement of his followers, who were unexpectedly shipped in their hunting apparel. He was joyfully received by his subjects at Tangiers, where he continued a few months, then returned to Lisbon without atchieving any thing remarkable.

He set out again for Africa, in the year 1578, with an army of 15,000 men; and was joined at Arzila by Muley Mahomet, the presumptive heir to the empire of Morocco. Both armies

K K

marched

marched in a body against the Emperor Muly Moluc, who was well prepared to receive them; for he had 40,000 cavalry, and about half the number of infantry; nevertheless he resolved not to give them battle till after he should have drawn them far into the country, exhausted them with fatigue and hunger, and put them beyond the possibility of effecting a retreat. The manœuvre succeeded; his troops gave way in several skirmishes, and precipitately retired, as if not daring to hazard a general engagement. This animated *Sebastian*; he pressed forward without perceiving the stratagem. When Muly Moluc saw he had inveigled his adversaries far enough, and found a champagne country, where his cavalry might act effectually, he halted.

On the morning of the fourth of August, both armies were drawn up in battle array in the plains of Alcacerquivir. The Portuguese troops, with those of their ally, were distributed into three lines; King *Sebastian* appeared in the van-guard dressed in green. Muly Moluc's forces were drawn up in the form of a crescent. The Portuguese began the attack vigorously, and cut their way through the centre of the enemy: Muly Moluc seeing this, ordered his cavalry to wind round and charge them in flank, and thus made a desperate havoc among the Christians and their allies. *Sebastian* performed prodigies of valour on this fatal day; fighting gallantly till the last wherever danger threatened most. He had three horses killed under him; and when he fell into the hands of the enemy, his body was bleeding at twenty-five different wounds. Whilst some soldiers were disputing about the honour of taking the royal prisoner, a Moorish officer came up, and with a stroke of his scymetar dispatched the unfor-

tunate *Sebastian*. Muley Mahomet was drowned in retreating, and Muly Moluc expired in his litter amidst shouts of victory. Thus perished, on this memorable day, three great princes! The slaughter on both sides must have been immense, since not more than fifty of the Christians escaped death or captivity.

HENRY.

Henry was the eighth son of King Emanuel, and the only heir in the male line to the crown. He may be properly considered as the Melchisedeck of Portugal, being at once both priest and King. He was Archbishop of Braga, Lisbon, and Coimbra; Abbot of the monastery of Alcobaça, and afterwards Cardinal. In the very church where he received the mitre, he put on the crown, on the 20th of August 1578, in the sixty-seventh year of his age. His first care was to punish those that had formerly offended him; some he deprived of their offices; some he chastised, and banished others; forgiving none; shewing at the same time that he knew not, as a king, how to pardon; as a priest, to forgive; nor as a prince, to prevent offences.

One of his prelates represented to him, that some regulations he had ordained in the discipline of the church, in virtue of his authority as a spiritual prince, were severe and quite unnecessary; "I'll oblige you," said he, "notwithstanding, to comply with them."—"Then I must obey," replied the prelate, "since you have the command of a general, the authority of a pope, and the power of a king."

King *Henry* had a great resemblance to Emanuel his father; he was thin, active, abstemious, and inured to labour; well versed in theology and the learned languages. He was repeatedly intreated to name his successor, but in vain. He reigned but one year, and died in discontent with his subjects; who revered him as a priest, but despised him as a king.

PHILIP II.

After the death of Cardinal Henry, *Philip* II. of Spain started up among other competitors for the crown of Portugal; to which he claimed a right in virtue of his mother the Empress Isabella, daughter of Emanuel King of Portugal. When he received intelligence of the death of King Sebastian, he ordered funeral obsequies to be performed in honour of him at Madrid. One of his generals remarked, "Sir, we ought to go to Lisbon to celebrate the funeral of the King."—"Not yet," replied Philip, very calmly. Shortly after, he ordered the old duke of Alba, who had been long disgraced and imprisoned, to conduct his troops against Portugal, without deigning to see him. This, perhaps, is the first time of intrusting a general under disgrace with his sovereign, with the command of a formidable army, and upon an enterprise of the first magnitude. The Duke reduced Portugal to subjection in three weeks; and in November following, in the year 1581, *Philip* came thither and was crowned.

Among other immunities which *Philip* unclaimed, and of his own free will granted to the Portuguese, were the following:

ing: That he would maintain all their ancient rights and privileges: that the cortes should assemble as usual within the kingdom: that the governor or viceroy residing at Lisbon should be a native of Portugal, or else a Prince of his house: that all other places of honour, trust, or emolument, should be filled by Portuguese exclusively, both in the mother-country and the colonies: that none but Portuguese ships should be allowed to trade with their foreign possessions: that the national coin should be stamped with the arms of Portugal as heretofore. These articles he swore to maintain in the presence of the cortes; yet the history of Portugal bears testimony how faithfully he and his successors violated them.

Philip died at the palace of the Escorial in the year 1598, in the seventy-first year of his age; having reigned over Spain forty-one years, and over Portugal eighteen. He was the first Monarch, since the dominion of the Goths, that ruled over the entire of Hispania. No prince ever affected more gravity in his actions, dress, and deportment. He was never known to laugh; and boasted that he danced but three times in his life. When he first arrived at Lisbon, it should be mentioned to his honour, that he earnestly inquired after Camoens, who had been so miserably neglected by the weak King Henry; and when he was told the poet was dead, both his words and countenance expressed disappointment and grief. He gave another proof of his love of learning, when it was proposed to him to suppress the university of Coimbra for having supported the claim of his rival Don Antonio, Prior of Crato, to the throne of Portugal; *Philip* spurned the proposal with contempt, saying, "I am not empowered by the Muses to molest that venerable seat of science."

PHILIP III.

Of this King's transactions with regard to Portugal, there is nothing remarkable on record, except his pompous entry into Lisbon in the year 1619. The sumptuous preparations made for him by the Portuguese on this occasion, both by land and water, exceed any thing of a similar kind of modern times. The King, though always accustomed to ostentatious scenes, was so astonished to behold this unparalleled display of magnificence, that he exclaimed, "I never before this day thought myself a great Monarch." And indeed Portugal might truly exclaim, that she never found herself so insignificant as on that day, in thus idly displaying her tinsel pride, the vestiges of her former opulence, to gratify the low ambition of a vain and impolitic Prince; whilst the Dutch, with rapid strides, were over-running her most valuable possessions in Asia and America; her resources at home exhausted, her navy dismantled, her fortifications deserted, her arsenals stripped, and the proud spirit of her sons humbled and dejected.

In the protection of letters, as in every other quality that constitutes a great Prince, *Philip* III. was far inferior to his father. Witness his miserable neglect of the great Michael Cervantes, whom he suffered literally to starve, for having offended his favourite and prime minister the Duke de Lerme, one of the greatest knight-errants of Spain; and whom Cervantes characterised in his renowned Knight of La Mancha.

Philip,

Philip, by his wretched policy towards the descendants of the Moors, cut off one of the first sinews of the state. He banished to the number of 500,000 of this useful class of people; or, according to others, 800,000; by which Spain lost not only their treasures, but more substantial riches, a bold, laborious race; the source of trade, industry, and the arts. Comines, the Spanish commentator, says on this occasion, "he acted well, but was very ill advised."

This King would suffer no horse he ever mounted, nor boat or other vessel he ever embarked in, to be afterwards used by any other person for similar purposes; a custom derived from the Moors.

PHILIP IV.

Since the death of King John III. Portugal continued to run incessantly a downward course; but it was reserved for *Philip IV.* to plunge it to the nether point. Not content with trenching upon their constitutional rights and privileges, he ordered all Portuguese who held commendams, to equip themselves and form a corps of cavalry, in order to proceed against the rebellious Catalans, under pain of losing their fiefs. The decree was received with murmurs; finding themselves, however, compelled to take up arms, they thought it more advisable to turn them against their tyrant, than a people oppressed like themselves; and whose example and alliance were likely to promote the cause of liberty. Shortly after, the revolutionary flame, which had been kindling during three years, and conducted with a secrecy and circumspection perhaps unparalleled in history, blazed forth on the third day of December 1640.

In

In the space of a few hours, the yoke of Spain was cast off, not only at Lisbon, but also in every town throughout the kingdom, and in most of the Portuguese colonies, and the Duke of Bragança proclaimed King. A Spaniard, who happened to be present at the bonfires and rejoicing which the people of Lisbon made on the occasion, astonished at a revolution so strange and sudden, exclaimed, with a sigh, "Is it possible that so fine a country costs the enemies of my master but a bonfire?"

Cardinal Richlieu is supposed to have acted a principal though not a prominent part, in bringing about this extraordinary revolution. The collection of Aubery, intitled *Mémoires pour servir à l'Histoire*, reports the long instruction that was given to the Sieur de Saint-Pé, whom the Cardinal sent to Lisbon with letters addressed to the principal men of the nation, "exhorting them to throw off the Spanish yoke, and put the Duke de Bragança on the throne, in case he would accept the crown; if he refused it, he offered to send from France a Prince of the blood to be their King."

JOHN IV.

On the 15th of December 1640, the Duke de Bragança was crowned King of Portugal, under the title of *John IV.* The following year he convoked the cortes of the kingdom, and directed them to investigate his title to the crown, in order to remove all doubts from the minds of his subjects; and to throw fresh obstacles on the pretensions of his rival. In this assembly he was recognized, by a solemn act, the true and legitimate King of Portugal, as being descended, by the Princess

his mother, from the Infante Edward, son of King Emanuel; whereas Philip IV. King of Spain, was descended from Emanuel only by a daughter; who, according to the fundamental laws of the kingdom, was excluded from the throne, having espoused a foreign Prince. The edict concludes thus: "The Portuguese, in placing *John IV.* upon the throne, are justified by every incontrovertible right; the right of succession, the right of representation, and the constitutional laws of the kingdom; rights which are more than sufficient to overturn a forced and tyrannical possession of sixty years, established and maintained by force of arms."

A person of the name of Encubert was received by the Portuguese as a prophet, for having presaged their delivery from a foreign yoke, when a King should arrive among them upon a wooden horse. Now, as the Duke de Bragança, on the day he was crowned, crossed the Tagus to Lisbon in a fisherman's bark, the prediction was clearly verified, or at least it obtained credit from piety and folly.

Of the attachment of the Portuguese to their legitimate Sovereign, and the rooted hatred they bear to the Spaniards, a striking instance occurred in the war that now ensued between the two crowns. A cavalier of the former nation, named Roque Antunes, was taken prisoner by the Spaniards; he cried *Long live John IV. King of Portugal.*—They promised to save his life if he would cry *Long live Philip.*—"Kill me then," said he; "life would be a disgrace to me upon that condition:" upon this he received the fatal blow.

John IV. was of a middle stature, gross, but athletic; careless in his apparel, and an enemy to new fashions. In conver-

sation affable, affecting wit. As a private man he had many good qualities; but very few as a king, except good intentions. His talents were of a very inferior order; timid, slow, and feeble: a good huntsman, but a bad general; a good prince, but a bad statesman. Without better heads than his, the revolution would never have been effected; whatever merit is due on that score properly belonged not to the head, but to the members of the state. He died in the year 1656, aged fifty-one; having reigned fifteen years.

ALFONSO VI.

In the year 1656, at the age of thirteen, *Alfonso* VI. took possession of the crown. From his infancy he was affected with a palsy in his right side; and betrayed symptoms of a disordered brain. He was of a vicious disposition; which, increasing as he advanced in years, led him into many excesses. He formed two companies of the most profligate men in the kingdom, one of horse, the other of foot, which he called the great and little patrols. With these he was wont to sally out of the palace by night, and attack every body he met in his way; so that he and his attendants generally returned with bloody swords.

Of religion he made no account. He heard mass in his chamber, in the week-days, whilst he was in bed. And upon holidays, he never went to his chapel till he had dined. As he could not be excused from hearing sermons, he ordered the preachers to cut them short. This was wounding them in the most tender part; for nothing can be so mortifying to an eloquent

eloquent preacher, as to be compelled to make short sermons. Some choose rather to be banished, or not to preach at all, than to obey the order.

In many other instances he exasperated the clergy, and shewed how little regard he had for preachers. "He laughed
"at comets in a most extravagant manner: there was one
"appeared at this time; he was told it foreboded the death
"of kings, or a change in their states; he gave it a thousand
"hard words from his terrace; called it a thousand names, and
"fired a pistol at it. It was easy to draw his true nativity, considering what sort of men he exasperated, and the great
"follies he committed."

In the year 1666, he married Mademoiselle d'Aumale, daughter of the Duke of Nemours. The first night's reception convinced the new Queen of her husband's incapacity to perform the nuptial rights. Her attendants perceived next day that things did not go on so agreeably between two persons of their age as might have been expected. The King gave her also a great deal of trouble upon many other occasions. In this unhappy state she continued a few months, then retired into a convent, both a wife and a maid; and an action for impotency was brought against *Alfonso*.

The Queen declared, before several counsellors of state and officers of the crown, the reason of her retreat. She wrote to the Chapter of the cathedral of Lisbon, desiring them to take cognizance of the affair. The Chapter having examined the matter, in conformity to the laws, judged the marriage to be contracted *de facto* and not *de jure*, and therefore declared it to

be void; and that the Prince and Princess may dispose of themselves as they should think proper, and divide their estates according to the tenor of their contract. It was immediately proposed to marry her to the Infante Don Pedro, the King's brother. The dispensation was not long a-coming. In short, Don Pedro took possession of his brother's wife and of his palace, and secured the King's person; who instantly signed a writing, acknowledging that he resigned the kingdom to his brother of his own motion.

The unfortunate *Alfonso* was sent into the island of Tercera, where he continued six years; fearing that the enemies of the state would rescue him from thence, he was removed to the palace of Cintra, where he died of an apoplexy in the year 1683.

PEDRO II.

During the lifetime of *Alfonso VI.* *Pedro* assumed no other title than that of Regent of the kingdom; under this title he governed with absolute authority for fifteen years. On the death of his brother he was proclaimed King. He made some wholesome laws to suppress robberies and assassinations; which prevailed in the kingdom before his reign with a kind of epidemic rage. His consort died in the year 1699, at the age of thirty-three; and shortly after, the Infanta, his daughter, died of grief for the death of her mother. The King was inconsolable for the loss of his Queen; he walked ten different nights from his palace to distant churches, to offer up prayers to her manes.

He

He committed the administration of public affairs to a council of five persons of distinguished families and titles; reserving to himself the decision of their acts. His army was commanded by the Duke de Schomberg. Chagrined at being thwarted in his projects by this council, and finding the soldiers reluctant to obey a foreign commander, he demanded his recal. He said, "he found less difficulty in triumphing over the valour of the Spaniards, than the envy of the Portuguese."

Nor were the soldiers better satisfied to be under the command of the Archduke Charles of Austria, who had now arrived in Portugal. They cried out for a general of their own nation. The King sent them a wooden image of Saint Antony of Padua, in a magnificent litter; they were satisfied; General Saint Antony was received with huzzas, and rendered every honour due to his high rank.

In the year 1704, a manifesto was issued at Lisbon, printed in the Latin, Portuguese, and Spanish languages; stating the violation, on the part of Spain, of certain articles of its treaty with Portugal. It concludes with these words: *Pedro II. is determined, like an able physician, to draw off all the bad blood from the veins of the Spaniards, if they persist any longer in their servile state of subjection to the court of France.* A French critic observes: "Every language has its peculiar expressions. I know not indeed whether this manifesto be penned in the style of the Portuguese; but of this I am certain, no civilized nation would put such a barbarous composition into the mouth of its Sovereign. And yet Don Pedro, notwithstanding his pretended knowledge of medicine, proved himself a
" bad

“ bad physician, or else the blood of the Spaniards must have
“ been uncommonly pure, for he drew but very little of it.”

Pedro II. died in the year 1706, aged fifty-eight. Under his reign the manufactures of the French were prohibited in Portugal, except a few trifling articles, for which they received an equivalent in hides, dying woods, and fruit.

JOHN V.

The power of the nobility of Portugal, which increased to an alarming height since the revolution, received a severe check under the reign of this Prince. He was heard to say, “ My grandfather feared the nobility; my father feared and “ loved them; for my part, I neither fear nor love them.” His authority, at first, was not sufficient to restrain their licentiousness; he found himself under the necessity of inflicting ignominious punishment on some, and to banish others to the colonies. He saw abuses in every department of the state, which he resolved to correct. He appointed three days in the week to give audience to his subjects; to the nobility on Sunday, and all persons without exception who chose to approach him on the other days were at liberty; he patiently heard their appeals, received their petitions, and thus became acquainted with every transaction of the state; so that not only his ministers, but also every other person in authority under him, were obliged to be very circumspect in their conduct. These measures had more effect in checking abuses, than the codes of civil and criminal laws; and at the same time prevented the necessity of inflicting punishment. He con-

cluded an honourable peace with the crowns of France and of Spain, which was ratified at Utrecht in the year 1713. The kingdom soon felt the happy effects of this treaty, and of the wise laws and regulations of a prudent Sovereign, zealous to promote the happiness of his people. Now arts and commerce flourished. The sciences began to rise, and men of letters were respected. He instituted the Royal Academy of History at Lisbon, in the year 1720; and established military schools in different parts of the kingdom. He sent learned men to different parts of Europe to collect the most rare and valuable books and manuscripts on every subject, with which he formed a voluminous library. Of his public structures there are two, which, in point of magnitude and expence, exceed all other edifices in Portugal, or that Europe has produced since his time; I mean that stupendous pile the aqueduct of Lisbon, and the royal basilic of Mafra.

In fine, his institutions, public monuments, and above all, his aversion from war, sufficiently prove that *John V.* had many traits of a great and good Prince. This praise, however, does not apply to him in the latter part of his reign, when the vigour of his mind declined faster than that of his body; he consigned all care of public affairs to his confessor and ministers, and dissipated his revenue in building churches and endowing convents. His devotion, which gained a complete ascendancy over his mind, degenerated into superstition, and terminated in imbecillity. He died in the year 1750, at the age of sixty; having reigned forty-four years.

A Chronological Series of the SOVEREIGNS of PORTUGAL.

Name.	Cognomen.	Country.	Born.	Crowned.	Reigned.	Lived.	Died.	Died at	Interred at
1 Alfonso I.	The Conqueror	Guimaraes	1109	1128	57	76	1185	Coimbra	Santa Cruz de Coimbra
2 Sancho I.	The Populator	Coimbra	1154	1185	26	57	1211	Coimbra	Santa Cruz de Coimbra
3 Alfonso II.	The Gros	Coimbra	1185	1211	12	38	1223	Coimbra	Alcobaça
4 Sancho II.	The Chaplain	Coimbra	1202	1223	25	46	1248	Toledo	Cathedral of Toledo
5 Alfonso III.	The Bolonese	Coimbra	1210	1246	32	69	1279	Lisbon	Alcobaça
6 Diniz I.	The Husbandman	Lisbon	1261	1279	46	63	1325	Santerem	Odivelas
7 Alfonso IV.	The Brave	Coimbra	1291	1325	32	66	1357	Lisbon	Cathedral of Lisbon
8 Pedro I.	The Just	Coimbra	1320	1357	9	46	1367	Estremoz	Alcobaça
9 Fernando	The Handsome	Coimbra	1345	1367	16	38	1383	Lisbon	Santerem
10 John I.	Of Happy Memory	Lisbon	1357	1385	48	76	1433	Lisbon	Batalha
11 Edward I.	The Eloquent	Viseu	1391	1433	5	46	1438	Thomar	Batalha
12 Alfonso V.	The African	Cintra	1432	1438	43	49	1481	Cintra	Batalha
13 John II.	The Perfect	Lisbon	1455	1481	14	40	1495	Alvor	Batalha
14 Emanuel I.	The Fortunate	Alcochete	1469	1495	26	52	1521	Lisbon	Belem
15 John III.	The Compassionate	Lisbon	1502	1521	35	55	1557	Lisbon	Belem
16 Sebastian	The Desideror	Lisbon	1554	1557	21	24	1578	Africa	Belem
17 Henry I.	The Chaste	Almeirim	1512	1578	1	68	1580	Almeirim	Belem
18 Philip II.	The Prudent	Valadolid	1527	1581	18	71	1598	Escorial	Escorial
19 Philip III.	The Pious	Madrid	1578	1598	23	43	1621	Madrid	Escorial
20 Philip IV.	The Great	Valadolid	1605	1621	19	60	1665	Madrid	Escorial
21 John V.	The Restorer	Villa Viçosa	1604	1640	15	51	1656	Lisbon	S. Vicente de Fóra
22 Alfonso VI.	The Victorious	Lisbon	1643	1656	11	40	1683	Cintra	Belem
23 Pedro II.	The Pacific	Lisbon	1648	1667	39	58	1706	Alcantara	S. Vicente de Fóra
24 John V.	The Most Faithful	Lisbon	1689	1706	44	60	1750	Lisbon	S. Vicente de Fóra
25 Joseph I.	The Most Faithful	Lisbon	1714	1750	27	63	1777	Lisbon	S. Vicente de Fóra
26 Maria I.	The Most Faithful	Lisbon	1734	1777					

A
MAP
OF
PORTUGAL.

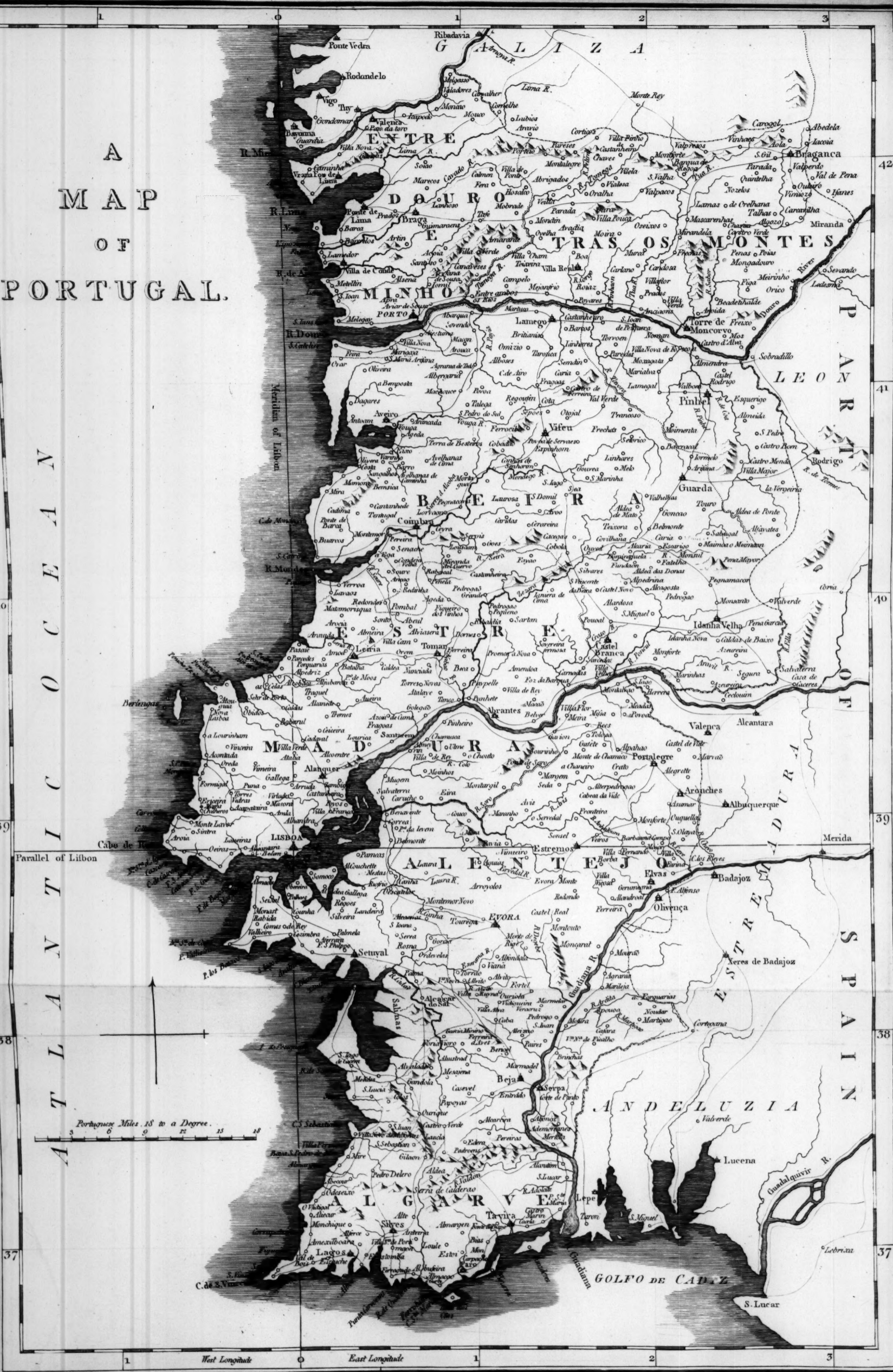
A
T
L
A
N
T
I
C
O
C
E
A
N

Parallel of Lisbon

Portuguese Miles 18 to a Degree.

West Longitude East Longitude

Published by J. Neumann, Neudamm, near Berlin.





I N D E X.

A

ACADEMIES formerly at Lisbon, an account of, 154, 155, 156
Academy Royal, an account of, 34, 35, 156
Affection, remarkable, 194
Age, remarkable, of a statesman, 171
Agriculture, causes of its decline, 35, 36
 ——— impediments to its advancement, 36, 37, 38, 84
 ——— preferable to manufactures, 74
Albofeira, bay of, 33
Albuquerque, *Don Alfonso*, anecdotes of, 181, 182
Alentejo, province, description of, 8, 9
Alfonso I. 110, 224, 225, 226
Alfonso II. 228
Alfonso III. 230, 231
Alfonso IV. 233, 234
Alfonso V. 239, 240, 241, 242
Alfonso VI. 258, 259, 260
Alfonso X. of Castile, 159
Algarve, province, description of, 9
 ——— derivation of the word, 9
Algebra, meaning of the word in Arabic, 149
Alkali, a premium offered for the best manner of extracting from salt, 69
Almanac, derivation of the word, 149
Almonds, price of, 54
Alum, mines of, 48, 50, 104
Atvor, bay of, 33
Ambergreis, 105
Animal productions of the colonies, 55, 56, 64, 90, 91, 92, 93, 94
Antilles, quantity of ginger imported thence, 65, 99
Antimony, mines of, 49, 106
 ——— used in purifying gold, 106
Antiquities, 129, 130, 131, 132, 133
Aqueduct, ancient, 130
Arabic words in the Portuguese language, 148, 149, 150, 151
 ——— how distinguished, 149
Arms of Portugal, origin of, 224, 225
Army, state of, 118
Aromatics of the colonies, 65

Arrabida, mountain of, 11
Arsenic, mines of, 48, 49
Art of thieving, a book so called, 180
Asbestos, different kinds of, 46, 47, 104
Asphaltum used in careening ships, 105
Atide, anecdotes of, 188
 ——— *Don Lewis de*, anecdotes of, 193
Aveiro, port of, 30, 31
Axioms, oeconomical, 80, 81.
Azevedo, *Don Jeronymo de*, anecdotes of, 187, 188

B

Bag-pipes, a celebrated player of, 173
Balls, nature of iron mineral, 107
Balsams of the colonies, 65, 103
Bar of Lisbon, 32
Barbosa, *Augustin*, anecdotes of, 166
Barilba, 41
Bark, medicinal, of Brazil, 65, 97
Barros, *Don John de*, anecdotes of, 169, 170
Baths, medicinal, 21, 22, 23
 ——— ancient, 130
Bays and ports, 29, 30, 31, 32, 33, 34
Beatrice, *Dona*, anecdotes of, 194, 195
Beauty, idea of, in Portugal, 139, 140
Bees, various species of, 94
Beggars, description of, 144
 ——— laws for restraining, 144
 ——— mode of occupying, 144
Beira, province, description of, 7
Bellem, tower of, 32
Besieging by parallels, first practised by the Turks, 183
Bishops, number of, in the kingdom, 10
Bismuth, mines of, 49, 106
Bitumen, 49, 50
Bluteau, *Raphael*, anecdotes of, 168, 169
Board of trade established at Lisbon, 56
Boat, a remarkable voyage made in one, 184
Book, dedicated by a king to a fidler, 173
 ——— one dedicated by Edward I. to his consort, 239
 ——— one with ten prefaces, 169

Books, number of, wrote by Manoel de Mello, 163
Botelba, Diogo, anecdotes of, 183, 184
Brazil, length and breadth of, 124
 ——— Extent of its coast, 124
 ——— how bounded, 124
 ——— natural productions of, 49, 50, 55, 64, 88, 95, 96, 103, 104
 ——— trade of, with Portugal, 63, 64, 65
 ——— history of, 167
 ——— manner in which the inhabitants catch their black cattle, 146
Bridges, 17, 130, 134
Buildings, public, 133
Bull feasting, 145, 146

C

Cabo de Roca, head land of, 32
Caffir, meaning of the word in Arabic, 150
Caminha, harbour of, 29
Camoens, Luis de, anecdotes of, 175, 176, 177, 178, 179
Canon, remarkable, 183
Caout-chouc, or elastic resin of Brazil, 99
Cape of Espichel, 32
 ——— of St. Vincent, 33, 216
Caps made of the husks of a palm tree, 98
Carolina, amount of rice exported thence in one year, 89
Carthaginians in Portugal, 43, 218, 219
Carts, and other vehicles of burden, a premium offered for improving, 68
Castro, Dona Ignez de, account of, 233, 234, 235
Castro Marim, port of, 34
Cats of Algalia, yield a species of musk, 91
Cattle, to prevent the exportation of, impolitic, 84
 ——— manner of catching in Brazil, 146
Caves, ancient account of, 27, 28
Celts in Lusitania, 218
Ceremonies formerly used at the death of the kings of Portugal, 134
Challenge, remarkable, 195
Character of the Portuguese, 121, 142, 143
 ——— a laconic one of Fernando I. 236
Cheese, price of, 54
Cherry, a large species of, 40
Chestnuts, flour of, 39
Chefs, game of, an account of, 151
Cid, meaning of the word, 150
Cinnamon, transplanted in the island of St. Thomas, 98
Cintra, mountain of, 11, 12
Cities, number of, in the kingdom, 10
Clavis Prophetarium, a book so called, 179, 180

Coal, mines of, 45, 46, 48, 50
Cochineal, quantity of, imported to Europe, 93
Coimbra, university of, 153, 154
Coins, ancient, an account of, 125, 126, 127
 ——— modern, 127, 128
Colonies of Portugal, 121, 122, 123, 124
 ——— natural productions of, 49, 50, 64, 65, 90, 91, 92, 93, 94, 95, 96, 97, 98, 99, 100, 101, 102, 103, 104, 105, 106, 107, 108
Colours, various, for painting and dying, 19, 41, 48, 50, 55, 58, 59, 64, 65, 93, 94, 95, 96, 97, 98, 100, 107, 108
Columns, African, 134
Combat, remarkable, 195, 196
Comedy, a premium offered for the best, 73
Comet, Alfonso V. fires a pistol at one, 259
Commerce of the Portuguese, 59, 60, 61
 ——— from whom they obtained the first idea of, 232
Conquests of the Portuguese, 120, 121, 122, 123, 124
 ——— extended farther than those of the Romans, Macedonians, or Phœnicians, 121
Constitution and government, 109
Copper, mines of, 45, 49, 106, 127, 128
 ——— a remarkably large piece of native, 106
Copperas, mines of, 48, 104
Coral, fishery of, formerly in Algarve, 58
Cordoso, Emanuel, anecdotes of, 172
Cords made of different vegetable substances, 99
Corn formerly exported from Portugal, 35
 ——— produce of, in an acre, 53
 ——— expence of cultivation, 53
 ——— quantity of, imported, 77, 80, 82.
Corps found, after many years, uncorrupted, 227
Cotton, 55
 ——— quantity of, spun in England in five years, 82
Count Henry, account of, 148, 222, 223
Coutinho, Don John de, anecdotes of, 191, 192
Cream of tartar, 40, 50
Crown, its jewels disposed of to provide sustenance for the poor, 231
Crucibles, materials for making, 47, 48
Cruzado coin, origin of, 126, 127
Cruzadors traded with Portugal, 232
Curiosities, 133
Custom, remarkable, 255
Cutlery, manufactory of, 5

D

Dance, remarkable, 235
Dialogue between a pilgrim and his father, 209, 210, 211

Diamonds

Diamonds of Brazil, observations on, 103, 104
Dictionary of the Portuguese language, 168
Die cast to determine peace or war, 241
Diniz I. 35. 231, 232, 233
Don, the first that assumed the title, 113, 114
Douro river, 16, 17
Dragon's blood, 103
Dramatic writers, 157. 161
Drugs, medicinal, of the colonies, 50. 65. 97.
 100. 103, 104, 105, 106. 108
Duties exorbitant on foreign manufactures, 85
Dying-plants of the colonies, 64. 98. 100

E

Earthquake, estimate of the loss sustained by it at
 Lisbon, 116
Edifices, ancient, 129, 130. 132
 — modern, 133, 134
Edward I. 238, 239
Emanuel I. 43. 245, 246
Emery found in Portugal, 45
Encubert, prophecy of, 257
England, amount of grain it received from and sent
 to France, 89
 — trade of, with Portugal, 59, 60, 61, 62,
 63
Entre Douro e Minho, province, description of,
 4, 5
Epigrams of Father Macedo, 160
Epitaph, curious, 186, 187
Epsom-salts, 48
Ericcira, harbour of, 31
Escobar, André de, anecdotes of, 173
Esparto found in Algarve, 40
Espichel, cape of, 32
Esposende, port of, 30
Estrella, mountain of, 12
Estremadura, province, description of, 7, 8
Eulogy, a premium offered for one, 73
Ewes of Guinea imported into Castile and Eng-
 land, 90
Exports of Portugal, 60, 61. 63

F

Faro, harbour of, 34
Fern, a species of which yields a silken down, 100
Fernando I. 236
Ferum Speculare, 107
Fidalgos, character of, 142, 143
Fidler, a book dedicated to one, 173
Figures, ancient, on a rock, 28
Fish formerly caught by the Portuguese on the
 coasts of England, 62, 63

Fish, quantity of, imported, 62
 — price of, per quintal, 62
 — a premium offered for the best manner of
 curing, 69
Fisheries, observations on, 57
 — number of the Dutch which subsist by, 93
 — amount of their produce, 91, 92
Fishery of coral formerly in Algarve, 58
Fish-oil, remarks on, 57
Flax, price of, 54
 — various species of, 99
Fleets of cruzadors trade with Portugal, 232
Flints for making toys, 47
Flora Lusitania, written by Mr. Vandelli, 41
Flour of Indian corn, 39
 — of chestnuts, 39
Forgery, remarkable, 185
Fortress of St. Julian, 32
 — of St. Lawrence, 32
 — of Dieu, 183
Fossils, various, 46. 48. 103
Fountains, remarkable, 23, 24
Fullers-earth, remarks on, 48. 50. 108

G

Galvaon, Don Antonio, anecdotes of, 192, 193
General, a singular one, 261
Gentlemen of Portugal, character of, 142
Georgics of Virgil, a premium offered for a transla-
 tion of, 70
Gibraltar, derivation of the word, 150
Ginger, quantity of, prepared by the Dutch, 65;
 99
 — quantity of, sent from the Antilles to
 Europe, 99
Gold found in Portugal, 17, 18. 21. 43, 44
 — native, a remarkably large piece of, in the
 possession of the Queen of Portugal, 88
 — mines of, 21. 43, 44. 87. 107
 — mixed with platina, 107
 — its formation in the mines, 87, 88
 — found in crystallized pyrites, 105
 — antimony used in purifying, 106
 — the nations poor that possess mines of, 87
Goths in Lusitania, 219
Gout, how named by the Arabians, 150
Grain, quantity of, imported annually, 77. 80.
 82
 — what kind of, most cultivated in the king-
 dom, 53
 — price of, 54
 — of the produce of Brazil, 88
 — quantity of, England received from and sent
 to France, 89

Grammar,

Grammar, a premium offered for the best philosophic one of the Portuguese language, 72
Graniter, 46
Gratian, remarks of, on the Portuguese nobility, 137
Grotto, ancient, description of, 28
Guadiana, river, 17, 18
Guaxima, a tree of the kind of which are made ropes, 55
Guevera, remarks of, on the Portuguese nobility, 137
Gun-powder, observations on, 69

H

Hair-powder made of a root called mandioca, 64
Hard-ware, amount of, sent by England to Portugal in the year 1784, 63
Hats, manufactories of, 5, 56
Hemp, price of, 54
 — made of different vegetable substances, 99
Hemp-seed, difficulty of transporting from Brazil to Europe, 99
Henry I. 251, 252
Hibernia, supposed derivation of the word, 218
Hippopotamus found on the coast of Angola, 92
Historians, principal, 157
History of Portugal, a learned Italian engaged to write, 241
 — of Brazil, 167
Holland, number of its inhabitants that subsist by the fishery trade, 93
Heta, a Moorish lady, anecdotes of, 188, 189, 190
Husks, caps made of, 98

I

Jalap grows in Brazil, 100
Iberia, Spain anciently so called, 216
Jewels of the crown disposed of to provide sustenance for the poor, 231
Jews, origin of, in Spain and Portugal, 218
 — banished to the island of St. Thomas, 98
 — great improvements made by them, 98
Implements of husbandry, a premium offered for improving, 68
Imports of Portugal from Brazil, 63, 64, 65
 — from England, 59, 60, 61, 62, 63
 — from Ireland, 59, 60
Indian-corn, 89
Indigo, 50, 55, 64, 89
 — how to preserve it from mould, 101, 102
Industry and oeconomy, writers on, 55

Inquisition, by whom established in Portugal, 248
Inquisitions, number of, in Portugal, 10
Inscription, curious, 175
Inscriptional stones, ancient, 131
John I. 237, 238
John II. 242, 243, 244, 245
John III. 247, 248
John IV. 172, 173, 256, 257, 258
John V. 262, 263
Ireland, trade of, with Portugal, 59, 60
Iron, mines of, 44, 45, 49, 50, 106, 107.
 — mineral of globular figures, 107
Isabella, *Dona*, anecdotes of, 232, 233
Isinglass, remarks on, 56, 58

K

King of Portugal, his titles, 113
 — of *Portugal and Algarve*, the first that took the title, 230
Kings of Portugal, anecdotes of, 224, & seqq.
 — hostile, reward for killing, 110
 — Ceremonies formerly used at their death, 134, 135, 136
Knighthood, orders of, 114

L

Lages, port of, 33
Lakes, principal, 19, 20
Land, portion of, under tillage, 37
 — imperfect manner of cultivating, 37, 38
 — produce of an acre of, in wine and corn, 53
 — expence of cultivation, 53
 — a premium offered for the best method of burning, 67
 — sandy, a premium offered for the best method of cultivating, 68
 — value of, depends upon the price of wool, 83
Language, Portuguese, 147, & seqq.
Laws, Justinian, 74
 — constitutional, 109, 110, 111
 — penal, 111
 — against beggars, 144
Lead, mines of, 44, 49
 — a species of, similar to that of which the English make pencils, 106
Learning, progress of, 153, 154, 155, 156, 157, 158, 159
Legumes, price of, 54
Lemon-tree remarkably fruitful, 13
Letter, the plague communicated by one, 238, 239

- Lexicon* of Portuguese words derived from the Arabic, 149
Library, the first in the royal palace, 241
Lima, river, 18
Linen, manufactories of, 5
Lisbon, bar of, 32
 — number of ships arrived there in the year 1790, 61
 — a premium offered for the best topographico-medica description of, 70
 — a premium offered for the best account of the actual medical temperament of, 70
Literature, various, 157
 — for the best account of the state of, a premium offered, 71
Litter, manner of travelling in, 145
Locution, a premium offered for the best treatise on, 71
Luciad, an epic poem, various translations of, 179
Lucius, supposed æra of his reign in Portugal, 217
Lusitania, the most ancient name of Portugal, 2
 — supposed derivation of the word, 2
 — so named after Lucius, 217
 — ancient, 217
 — modern, 217
Lusitanians extended their conquests farther than the Romans, Macedonians, or Phœnicians, 121
- M
- Macedo*, Francisco de, anecdotes of, 160, 161, 162
Machines for spinning cotton, number of, established in England, 82
Magalhães, Fernando de, anecdotes of, 190, 191
Magna Charta, 109, 110, 111
Magnets of Portugal and Brazil, 45. 107
Magnesia, remarks on, 48. 50
Magrico, anecdotes of, 195, 196
Maize, culture of, 53
Mamoneiro, an exotic plant that yields oil, 54
Mandioca, a root, of which is made hair-powder, 64
Manganese, mines of, 49
Manifesto, remarkable, 261
Manufactories, 4, 5, 6. 44. 55, 56, 57, 58. 79. 83
 — number of, in the kingdom, 55, 78
 — supposed amount of all their produce, 81
 — their produce not equivalent to the value of the corn imported, 82
 — those most advantageous to the state, 82, 83
 — general observations on, 57. 74. 82, 83, 84, 85, 86
Manure, a premium offered for the best substitute of that of animal dung, 67
Marbles, various, of Portugal, 46. 50
Marine, royal, state of, 118, 119
 — pay of the officers, 119, 120
Mascarenhas, Don John de, anecdotes of, 182, 183
Mathematics, neglect of, 158
Measures and weights, table of, xi
Mello, Don Manoel de, anecdotes of, 163, 164
Mendoza, Fernandes de, anecdotes of, 174, 175
Menezes, Don John de, anecdotes of, 170, 171
Mentiroso, Don Pedro de, narrative of, 197, & seqq.
Mercury, mines of, 49
Mermaids of Angola, 92
Military establishment, 117
 — ancient, a premium offered for the best account of, 73
Mineral productions of the colonies, 49, 50. 103, 104. 106, 107
Mines, ancient, 21. 25, 26, 27. 43
Minho, river, 19
Minium anciently found in the river Minho, 19
Molybdenum plumbago, pencils made of, 106
Mondego, river, 18, 19
 — port of, 31
Montejunto, mountain of, 12
Moorish remains, 133, 134
Moors invade Spain and Portugal, 220
Morphew, for the best method of eradicating the disease in Brazil, a premium offered, 71
 — their descendants banished from Spain, 255
Mother of Hannibal a native of Lusitania, 218
Mountains, principal, description of, 10, 11, 12, 13
Mourning apparel of white drapery, 135
Mummies, medicinal virtues of, 150
Musarabe, meaning of the word, 150
Muscovy glass, 46. 104
Museums, 46. 106
Music, the only branch of the fine arts cultivated in Portugal, 158
 — professors of, 172, 173
Musket-balls, native, of iron mineral, 107
Musk, a species of, yielded by the cats of Algalia, 91
- N
- Natural History*, writers on, 171
Naval force, 118, 119
Neronha, Don Garcia de, anecdotes of, 185
Newfoundland fish, quantity of, imported in British ships, 62
 — price of, per quintal, 62
Nitre, remarks on, 50
Núre,

Nitre, for producing a quantity of, by artificial means, a premium offered, 69
Nobility, character of, 114
 ——— Gratian's remark on them, 137
 ——— Guivera's, 138
 ——— forfeited formerly in certain cases, 110,
 111
Nutmeg, a fruit resembling the produce of Brazil,
 99

O

Odemira, port of, 33
Officers of the Royal Navy, pay of, 119, 120
Oil, 39. 92
 — price of, 54
 — extracted from an exotic plant, 54
 — manufactory of, 79
 — of fish, remarks on, 57. 92
Oporto, harbour of, 30
Orange-trees, remarkably fruitful, 4
 ——— juice of, used with tea instead of cream,
 42
Order of the Garter, Kings of Portugal who were
 Knights of, 238. 245
Orders of knighthood, 114
Orta, *Garcia de*, anecdotes of, 171, 172
Ossa mountain, description of, 13
Oxen employed in drawing vehicles of burden, 145
 — price of, in the year 1368, 17

P

Paper, manufactory of, 56
Parishes, number of, in the kingdom, 10
Pastel, quantity of, produced in the island of Madeira, 100
Peasantry, oppression of, 36. 78. 142
Pederneira, bay of, 31
Pedro, Prince, account of, 239, 240
Pedro I. 234, 235
Pedro II. 260, 261, 262
Peniche, found of, 31
Pepper, transplanted by the Jews in the island of St. Thomas, 98, 99
 ——— cultivation of, prohibited, to encourage that of India, 100
Periz, *Antony*, anecdotes of, 186, 187
Persic-words in the Portuguese language, 150, 151
 ——— how introduced, conjectures on, 151
 ——— in the English language, 151
Pewter, manufactory of, 44
Philip II. 252, 253
Philip III. 254, 255
Philip IV. 255, 256

Phœnicians in Portugal, 43
Pilgrim, narrative of, 197, & seqq.
Pipe of wine, prime cost of, 53
Pitch, a substitute for, 105
Pitta, *Don Sebastian da*, anecdotes of, 167, 168
Plague communicated by a letter, 238, 239
Planets of observation, how to find the equations of, a premium offered, 69
Plant, exotic, valuable, 54
Plants of Portugal, an essay on, 40
 — medicinal, of the colonies, 41. 65. 101
Platina found in Brazil, 107
Poems, premiums offered for, 73
 — epic, in the Portuguese language, 156
 — pastoral, 157
Poets, Portuguese, 156, 157
Pope John XXI. born at Lisbon, 230
Population of the kingdom, 10. 51, 52. 77
 ——— amount of, in the reign of Augustus
 Cæsar, 219
 ——— of the colonies, 52
Porcelain, materials for making, 47
Ports and bays, 29
Portugal, situation and etymology of, 1
 — length and breadth of, 1. 10
 — circumference of, 10
 — leagues of sea-coast and terrestrial boundary, 10
 — how bounded, 2
 — modern division of, 3
 — provinces of, 3
Pot-ash, amount of, sold by Russia to England, 102
Prefaces, ten, given to a book, 169
Premiums offered by the Royal Academy of Lisbon, 66, & seqq.
Promontorium Sacrum, the ancient name of Cape St. Vincent, 216
Provinces of the kingdom, description of, 3, & seqq.
Puchari, a fruit resembling nutmeg, 99
Pumice-stone in the Açores Isles, 108
Puzzolana found near Lisbon, 47
Pyrites, various kinds of, 48. 105, 106

Q

Queen, penalty for speaking ill of, 111
Quina Quina, or Jesuits bark, three new kinds of, found in Brazil, 65

R

Reeds used as pens for writing and drawing, 16
Reform wanting in Portugal, 75

Refin,

Resin, elastic, of Brazil, 99
Revenue of the crown, 115
Revolution of 1640, 255, 256
 — promoted by Cardinal Richlieu, 256
Ribeiro, Bernardino, anecdotes of, 164, 165
Rice, 54
 — amount of, exported from Carolina in one year, 89
Ricino, an exotic plant, which yields oil, 54
Rind of a tree which serves to make ropes, 55
River Nile, Albuquerque proposed to change the course of, 182
Rivers, account of, 13, 16, 17, 18, 30, 33, 34
 — those of Galicia and of Ireland had anciently similar names, 17
Roderick the last of the Gothic kings, 220, 221
Romans in Lusitania, 43, 219

S

Sagris, bay of, 33
Sal ammoniac extracted from the volcanos of the island of Michael, 105
Salt, 23, 31, 105
 — premium offered for extracting alkali from, 69
 — Epfom, 48
Salt-petre made from alum and red marl, 104
Sancho I. 226, 227
Sancho II. 229
Sceptre made of gold found in the river Tagus, 44
Schomberg, Duke de, his observation on the Portuguese, 261
Sealing-wax, a substitute for, 103
Sebastian I. 248, & seqq.
Selir, bay of, 31
Sepulchre, ancient, 131
Setuval, bay of, 32
Ship, a premium offered for the best design of one, 68
 — a premium offered for the easiest manner of ascertaining the distance it sails in a given time, 69
Ships, number of, that arrived at Lisbon in the year 1790, 61
 — careened with asphaltum, 105
Siege, the manner of conducting, by parallels invented by the Turks, 183
Silk, raw, price of, 54
 — manufactories of, 6, 55, 58
 — number of persons employed in them, 57, 78
 — worms, remarkable, 56, 93
 — produced by a species of fern, 100
Silver, mines of, 43, 44, 49
Sines, port of, 33
Snakes of Brazil, tanning their skins recommended, 93

Soap, how named in different languages, 151
Sovereigns of Portugal, a chronological series of, 264
Specie and bullion brought from Lisbon to Falmouth, 62
 — brought from Brazil to Portugal in 60 years, 115
 — amount of, supposed to have been lost in the earthquake, 116
 — quantity of, in circulation in the kingdom, 115
Spicery of the colonies, 98, 99
Spiders, a species of, which produce silk, 56, 94
Springs, remarkable, 23, 24, 25
Sponges found on the coasts of Portugal and Brazil, 58, 94
Statues, equestrian, 131, 132
 — ancient, 129, 132
Stones, precious, various, 49, 103, 104
Structures, public, 133
Sugar, quantity of, produced by the Jews in the island of St. Thomas, 98
 — manner of purifying, without waste, 102
Sulphur, mines of, 48, 105

T

Tagus, river, 14, 15, 16
Tamarinds of Brazil, 98
Tanning of the skins of snakes recommended, 93
Tavora, port of, 34
Tea-tree transplanted by the English in Carolina, 98
Temples, ancient, 129, 130, 132
Tin, mines of, 44, 49
Titles of the kings of Portugal, 113
Title-page, curious, 169
Tombs of the primitive kings of Portugal had neither epitaph nor inscription, 228
Towns, number of, in the kingdom, 10
Trade of Portugal with England, 59, 60, 61, 62, 63
 — with Ireland, 59, 60
 — with Brazil, 63, 64
Tragedy, a premium offered for the best, 73
Tras-os-Montes, province, description of, 6
Treasures brought from Brazil to Portugal, 115
 — from Lisbon to Falmouth, 62
 — carried away by the Spaniards from Portugal, 116
Treatise on the art of playing the bag-pipes, 173
 — of thieving, 180
Treaty between Portugal and England in the reign of Edward III. 62, 63
Tree, immensely large, 5

Tree,

- Tree*, the kind of one which serves to make ropes, 35
 — one which yields the genuine varnish, 103
Trees, a premium offered for planting, 68, 69
 — number of, destroyed in Brazil, 95
 — whose bark yield a kind of hemp, 99
Trophies, remarkable, 134, 193
Turnips, remarkably large, 40
Tyrrians in Lusitania, 217
- V
- Varnish-tree* of Brazil, 103
Vegetable productions of the colonies, 54, 55, 64, 65, 94, 95, 96, 97, 98, 99, 100, 101, 103
Viana, port of, 29
Vieira, Antonio, anecdotes of, 179, 180
Villa do Conde, port of, 30
Villa Nova de Portimao, port of, 33
Vine-root, remarkably productive, 4
Vines, culture and produce of, 53
Virgil, for the best translation of his *Georgics*, a premium offered, 70
Viriatus, sepulchre of, 131
Universities, 10
Voyage, remarkable, 184
- W
- Walnut-tree*, remarkably fruitful, 4
Walls, ancient, 132, 133
Wax produced by a shrub in Brazil, 100
Weights and measures, table of, xi
Wells, remarkable, 23, 24
Whale-fishery, what the Dutch gained by it in the year 1697, 92
Wheat, rapid growth of, 15
White used in the colour of mourning, 135
Wine, various kinds of, 39
 — prime cost of, 53, 54
- Wine*, quantity of, produced in an acre, 53
 — culture of, more productive than that of grain, 53
 — a premium offered for a treatise on the best method of cultivating, improving, and preserving, 66, 67
Women, description of, 139, 141
 — employed formerly to mourn over the deceased, 134
Woods, various, of the produce of Brazil, 95, 96, 98
 — gravity of a foot cube of each kind, 95, 96
 — petrified, 46, 48
Wool, observations on, 57
 — price of, 54
 — one of the principal things upon which agriculture depends, 83
 — dangerous to prohibit the exportation of, 84
Woollen-cloths, manufactories of, 56, 57, 58
 — the most interesting of all others, 83
 — amount of, imported from England in the year 1784, 63
Words derived from the Arabic and Persian, a list of, 148, 149
 — English supposed to be of Persian origin, a list of, 151
Writers, principal, 55, 156, 157, 159
Writing-pens made of reeds, 16
Writings, voluminous, of Macedo, 160
 — of de Mello, 163, 164
- X
- Xamut, Rabo ben*, anecdotes of, 188, 189, 190
- Z
- Zebras*, observations on, 90
Zig-zag, a Persian word, 151

THE END.